TREATISE

COMPOSED BY THE NOBLE AND REMARKABLE
CAPTAIN ANTONIO GALVANO, OF THE DIFFERENT AND
ASTOUNDING ROUTES BY WHICH IN TIMES GONE BY
PEPPER AND SPICES CAME FROM INDIA TO OUR
PARTS, AND ALSO OF ALL THE DISCOVERIES
ANCIENT AND MODERN WHICH HAVE
BEEN MADE UP TO THE YEAR ONE
THOUSAND FIVE HUNDRED
AND FIFTY.

WITH THE PARTICULAR NAMES OF THE PERSONS WHO
MADE THEM; AND IN WHAT SEASONS AND IN WHAT
LATITUDES, A WORK CERTAINLY VERY
REMARKABLE AND COPIOUS.

EXAMINED BY THE HOLY INQUISITION.

Printed in the house of JOAM DE BARREIRA, printer to our lord the King, in the Street of S. Mamede.

THE DISCOVERIES

OF THE

WORLD,

FROM THEIR FIRST ORIGINALL VNTO THE YEERE OF OUR LORD 1555;

Briefly written in the Portugall tongue, by *Antonie Galuano*, Gouernor of Ternate, the chiefe Island of the Malucos :

Corrected, quoted, and now publiſhed in English, by RICHARD HAKLUYT, *ſometime ſtudent of Chriſtchurch, in Oxford.*

LONDINI:
IMPENSIS *G. BISHOP.*
1601.

THE EPISTLE DEDICATORIE.

To the Right Honorable Sir Robert Cecill, Knight, principall Secretarie to her Maiestie, Master of the Court of Wards and Liveries, the worthy Chancellour of the Universitie of Cambridge, and one of her Majesties most honorable privie Counsell.

RIGHT Honorable, while I went about to publish our English Voyages and Discoveries, I was advised by master Walter Cope, a gentleman of rare and excellent parts, to draw them into a short sum, adding that in his opinion that course woulde proove most acceptable to the world, especially to men of great action and employment. Although in that worke then under the presse I could not conveniently alter my course, yet holding his advice, as in many things else, so in this, for sound and very good, I heere present unto your Honour a briefe Treatie most agreeable to the same. The authour whereof was one Antonie Galuano, a Portugall gentleman: of whose pietie towards God, equitie towards men, fidelity to his Prince, love to his countrey, skill in sea causes, experience in histories, liberalitie towards his nation, vigilance,

valour, wisedome and diligence in restoring and settling the decaied state of the Isles of Maluco, (where he remained sixe or seven yeeres governour,) if it please your Honour to read Fernando Lopez de Castagneda, or Ioannes Maffeius in their Histories of the East Indies, you shall finde more written in his singular commendation, then a large Epistle can well comprehend.

The worke though small in bulke containeth so much rare and profitable matter, as I know not where to seeke the like, within so narrow and streite a compasse. For heerein is orderly declared, who were the first discoverours of the world since the time of the flood: by what waies from age to age the spicerie, drugs, and riches of the East were conveied into the West: what were the causes of the alterations of those courses, as namely the changes of empires and government: the ceasing of all trafficke for many yeeres by the Gothes invasion of the Romane Empire: the rising up of the Mahumetane sect; with their overrunning of Africke and Spaine: the renewing againe, after many yeeres disturbance, of the traffic and entercourse of the East Indies; first by the califas of the aforesaid sect: and eftsoones by the Venetians, Ienowais and Florentines. Then followeth the taking of Ceuta in Barbarie by John the first king of Portugall of that name, in the yeere of our Lord 1415, whose third sonne Don Henry (which he had by the vertuous Ladie Philippa, daughter of John of Gante, and sister to Henry the fourth, King of England) was the first beginner of all the Portugall

discoveries, and continued the same for the space of fortie and three yeeres even to his dying day. By whose encouragement the Kings of Portugall found out with much patience and constancie the last way of the bringing the Spicerie into Europe by the Cape of Buona Sperança; and for these hundred yeeres past have become the chiefe Lords of the riches of the Orient. By emulation of which their good endevors, the Antiles and the West Indies began to be discovered by the kings of Spaine. The infancies of both which most important enterprises, the progresse of the same from time to time, the discoveries of islands, rivers, baies and harbours, of many rich provinces, kingdomes, and countries; the erecting of castles in sundry convenient islands and places, with the drawing of trafficke unto the same, where, when, by whom, and by whose authority is heere succinctly and faithfully recorded. So that if it please your Honour at your convenient leisure to take a sea card or a mappe of the world, and carie your eie upon the coast of Africa from Cape de Non, lying on the mayne in 29 degrees of northerly latitude, and follow the shore about the Cape of Buona Sperança till you come to the mouth of the Redde Sea, and passing thence along by the countrey of Arabia crosse over to India, and doubling Cape Comory compasse the gulfe of Bengala, and shooting by the citie of Malacca through the Streite of Cincapura, coast al the south of Asia to the northeast part of China, and comprehend in this view all the islands from the Açores and Madera in the West, to the Malucos, the Phillip-

pinas, and Japan in the East: you shall heere finde by order, who were the first discoverours, conquerours and planters in every place: as also the natures and commodities of the soyles, togither with the forces, qualities, and conditions of the inhabitants. And that which I mention of the Orient, is likewise to be understood of the Occident.

Now touching the translation, it may please you, sir, to be advertised that it was first done into our language by some honest and well affected marchant of our nation, whose name by no meanes I could attaine unto, and that as it seemeth many yeeres ago. For it hath lien by me above these twelve yeeres. In all which space though I have made much inquirie, and sent to Lisbon, where it seemeth it was printed, yet to this day I could never obtaine the originall copie; whereby I might reforme the manifold errours of the translator.

For whereas a good translator ought to be well acquainted with the proprietie of the tongue out of which and of that into which he translateth, and thirdly with the subject or matter it selfe: I found this translator very defective in all three; especially in the last. For the supplying of whose defects I had none other remedie, but to have recourse unto the originall histories, (which as it appeereth are very many, and many of them exceeding rare and hard to come by) out of which the authour himselfe drew the greatest part of this discourse. And in very deede it cost me more travaile to search out the grounds thereof, and to annexe the marginall quotations unto the work, then the translation

of many such bookes would have put me unto. Of which quotations there is yet a farther use, to wit, that such as have leasure sufficient, and are desirous to reade these things more at large, (for brevitie oftentimes breedeth obscuritie) may fully satisfie their desires by having recourse by the help thereof to the pure fountaines, out of which those waters which are drawne are for the most part most sweet and holsome. Now if any man shall marvel, that in these Discoveries of the World for the space almost of fower thousand yeeres here set downe, our nation is scarce fower times mentioned: hee is to understand, that when this author ended this discourse, (which was about the yeere of Grace 1555) there was little extant of our mens tranvailes. And for ought I can see, there had no great matter yet come to light, if myselfe had not undertaken that heavie burden, being never therein entertained to any purpose, until I had recourse unto yourselfe, by whose speciall favour and bountiful patronage I have been often much encouraged, and as it were revived. Which travailes of our men, because as yet they be not come to ripenes, and have been made for the most part to places first discovered by others, when they shall come to more perfection, and become more profitable to the adventurers, will then be more fit to be reduced into briefe epitomes, by my selfe or some other endued with an honest zeale of the honour of our countrey. In the meane season nothing doubting of your favourable acceptation of this my labour, I humbly beseech the author of all goodnes to replenish and en-

rich you with his best blessings, long to protect and preserve your Honour to the profitable service of her Majestie, and to the common benefit and good of the Realme.

From London this
29. of October
1601.

Your Honors Chaplein, in all dutie
most readie to be commanded,

RICHARD HAKLUYT.

FRANCIS DE SOUSA TAUARES VNTO THE HIGH AND MIGHTIE PRINCE DON JOHN DUKE OF AUEIRO.

ANTONIE GALUANO vpon his death bed left vnto me in his testament among his papers this booke. And because I am certaine he ordained it to bee presented vnto your Grace, I have thought good herein to fulfill his wil and testament, though in other things I have done nothing, the fault remaining not in me. And by all reason this treatie ought to be set foorth by a Portugall, seeing it intreateth of the variable waies from whence the pepper and spices came in

---

PROLOGO.

FRANCISCO DE SOUSA TAUAREZ, AO ILLUSTRISSIMO SENHOR DOM JOHÃO DALEM CASTRO, DUQUE DAUEYRO.

DEXANDO me Antonio Galuão que deos tem por seu testamenteiro, achey antre outros seus papeis este quaderno: & porque sou certo q' elle o ordenou pera o apresentar a vossa illustrissima senhoria, quis ao menos nisto somente comprir sua vontade, pois em seu testamento nam tenho comprido nenhũa cousa, nam por minha culpa. Com razam auia este tractado de ser de pessoa Portuguesa, pois he da materia dos caminhos desuairados, por onde a pimenta & especearia veyo nos tempos passados ás nossa

times past into our partes, and also of all the navigations and discoueries in the old time. In both of which things the Portugals have most trauailed. In this treatie and in nine or ten bookes of things touching Maluco and India (which the Cardinall willed me to give to Damian de Goes, saying that he should content me, for otherwise I could not deliuer them) this true Portugall occupied himselfe against the vnfortunate and sorrowfull times which he had been in (which were all ended before all our daies and times): for when he received the captainship and fortresses of Maluco, all the kings and gouernours of all the ilands about being agreed to make war against the Portugals, vntill such time as they might drive them all out of the countrey, he fought against them all with onely 130 Portugals, when they were all together, and strong in Tidore; and he gave them the ouerthrow and killed their king, and one Ternate,[1] the principal author of that war, and he tooke from them their fortresse: so upon this victorie they submitted themselves,

Antonio Galuano captaine of Maluco.

---

partes: & assi de todas as nauegações & descobrimentos antigos & modernos: ambas estas duas cousas os Portugueses tem feito muita auantajem ao passados. Em este tractado com noue ou dez liuros das cousas de Maluco & da India, que me o Cardeal mandou dar a Damiam de Goes, dizendo que mo[2] satisfaria (que doutra maneyra eu nam lhos podia dar), se ocupou este verdadeiro Portugues contra os infortunados & tristes tempos em que se via (como tudo passou āte nossos olhos & tempo), porque entregandolhe a capitania & fortaleza de Maluco cō todos os Reys & senhores de todas as ylhas juntos, & conformes a fazer a guerra aos Portugueses ate os deitar de todo fora da terra, pelejou com todos elles com soo cento & trinta Portugueses estando todos juntos & fortes em Tidore, & os desbaratou & matou a el rey, & do Ternate prīcipal autor da guerra, & lhes tomou a fortaleza: com a qual vitoria logo se renderam & vieram á obediencia & seruiço del rey nosso señor.

[1] And killed the king of Ternate ?

[2] Me ?

and came under the obeisance and service of our King of Portugall. Herein two things happened of great admiration. The first, that all the kings and gouernours of Maluco agreed togither against vs, a thing that never fell out, nor yet credible to be like to happen: for they are ever at variance among themselves. The seconde, that the Captaine of Maluco with onely his ordinarie soldiers should have the victorie against so many being all together. For sometimes it happeneth that some of the captaines of Maluco with many extraordinarie soldiers besides their ordinarie, yea and with the aide of all the kings and lords of Maluco in their favour and aide, went againste one king onely of them, and came backe againe with losse. So there may be reckoned three notable things done in India, I say of qualitie (but of more quantitie and importance there have been others); which were the taking of Muar by Emmanuel Falcon, and the winning of Bitam by Peter Mascarenas, and this, whereof we presently treate. For all these three deedes seemed to be impossible to be atchieved, considering the small quantitie of soldiers which the captaines had in giving

Variance usually among the kings of Maluco.

Duas cousas socederam aqui de grande admiraçam: a primeira serem todos os Reys & senhores de Maluco juntos & conformes contra nos (cousa q' nunca acõteceo nẽ se cree q' possa acõtecer por quã differentes sempre sam antre si). A segunda o capitam de Maluco com soo a gente ordinaria, auer victoria de todos elles jũtos, que per vezes aconteceo que algũs capitães de Maluco com muita gente extraordinaria, alem da sua ordinaria, & com todos os reis & senhores de Maluco em seu fauor & ajuda, foram sobre hum soo rey delles, & vieram de là cõ muita quebra. Que se pode dizer, q' tres feitos grandes se fezeram na India, digo em calidade (q' de mais importancia & de mayor quantidade ouue outros) os quas sam a tomada de Muar por Manoel falcão, a de Bitam por Pedro mascarenhas, & este de que tratamos, porq' todos estes tres feitos pareciã impossiuel auerẽ os capitães vic-

the enterprise against so many; with the order and maner by them ordained how and which waies to obtaine their purpose as well by their enimies as by themselves. And they could not be atchieved otherwise but by using a meane and order not thought of at the first by the Portugals, nor yet ever suspected by their enimies. And, besides this, his father and fower of his brethren were all slaine in the king's seruice. And he now being the last of his linage, caried with him into Maluco woorth ten thousand crusadoes [which by share of commercial speculations, and loans, and salaries paid to him, was all gained at Diu[1]], which he spent not in idleness, nor yet in play, but only in bringing of many kings and innumerable townes unto our holy faith, and in the preserving of Maluco, employing all his power and strength that all the cloues might come vnto the hands of the kings highnes, which with Maluco yielded unto him every yeere five hundred thousand crusadoes; being all

torias com a gente com que os cometeram: & com a ordem ou modo que todos cuidauam, por onde a cousa se auia de cometer, assi dos amigos como dos ynmigos: & nam se acabaram por outra nenhũa cousa, se nam porque os capitães os cometeram por lugar & ordem, que nem dos Portugueses, nem dos mesmos immigos foy nunca cuidado nem pensado. E alem disto sendo seu pay & quatro yrmãos seus todos mortos em seruiço del rey: & sendo elle ja o derradeiro de sua linagem, & leuando cõsigo fazenda a Maluco que valia dez mil cruzados, de contratos q' com partes fez, & emprestemos & ordenados, que lhe pagarão, tudo empregou em Dio: & os gastou, nam em jogos, nẽ em outros maos modos, se nam soo em trazer muitos reys & innumeraueis peuos[2] á nossa sancta fee como em seu tempo fez, & na guerra, & em co'seruar Maluco, & em trabalhar & poer[3] todas suas forças, pera que todo o crauo viesse á mão de S. A. com q' Maluco lhe renderia cada ãno mais

[1] A settlement of the Portuguese in the East Indies. The crusado is now worth about 2*s*.

[2] Pouos ?

[3] Por ?

to his great preiudice, let, and hinderance. For if he had gathered cloues for himselfe, as the captaines of Maluco haue done and doe, then he had come home very rich. But when he came home into Portugall in great hope (such is the simplicite of the best natures) to be rewarded for his good service, and to be more fauored and honored, then if he had brought home with him an hundred thousand crusadoes, he was greatly deceived. For he found neither favour, nor yet honor, but onely among the poor and miserable, to wit, in an hospitall, where he was kept seventeene yeeres vntill the hower of his death; and there he had allowed vnto him his winding sheete to burie him in; and the brotherhood of the convent prepared for his buriall as for a poore courtier cast off by all men, leaving himselfe indebted in two thousand crusadoes, whereof part came out of India, and part thereof many of his friends had lent him to maintaine him in the hospitall; for in all these seventeene yeeres he had not of his highnes for to helpe himselfe with so much as one riall of plate, nor yet I of the bookes which I deliuered received any thing to discharge his will with

Goodseruice full ill rewarded.

---

de quinhẽtos mil cruzados, & sẽdo tudo ẽ grã p' juyzo seu: porq' fazendo crauo pera si, como fizeram & fazem todos os capitães de Maluco viria muito rico. O gram fraqueza da nossa natureza humana, q' vindo elle a Portugal com grão confiança, q' pello q' tinha feito auia de ser mais fauorecido & honrrado, q' se trouxera cem mil cruzados, se achou muy enganado, porq' nelle nam achou outro fauor ou honra, se nam o dos pobres miserauees, quero dizer o do hospital: onde o teueram dezasete annos, ate que nelle morreo, & delle lhe derão o lançol pera o amortalhar: & a confraria da corte como a cortesão pobre & desamparado lhe fez o enterramento, deixando dous mil cruzados de diuidas, parte que trouxe da India, & parte q' muitos de seus amigos lhe emprestaram pera se mant'er no hospital: porq' em todos estes dezasete annos nunca de S. A. pera se remediar ouue hum soo real, nem eu dos liuros que dey, nem pera deseucarregar sua alma. Com tudo assi como

[nor for the good of his soul]. Yet for all this, even as vpon the prosperitie of his victories he neuer made any boast, so likewise in his adversities his great stomacke did nothing abate his hart.[1] As there are good proofes that with soe many and so continuall disgraces[2] as he suffered, he neuer vnto the hower of his death left off to raise and to augment the yeerely rent vnto a counto,[3] which some made strange[4] and would not give eare unto. So that euen as he was extreme painfull in the performance of his service, so he was the like in the things sounding vnto the perfecting of the same,[5] (which was the cause that he was brought vnto the state that he died in). For he could not see the qualitie of the time, but onely those of his great seruice, by reason of the great charges that it stood him in. And his saying was, that he was borne, not for to say that his constellation was in the wars victorious, but in the ouercoming of kings by the arte of

A Counto is 50,000 Crusadoes.

---

cõ as prosperidades das victorias nunca se ensoberueceo, assi nẽ cõ as aduersidades seu grãde animo se diminuyo nem abaixou: como heboa proua, que com tamanhos & cõ tam continuos desprezos como padeceo, nunca ate ora de sua morte deixou de requerer & importunar por hum conto de renda cada anno. O q' algũs estranhauão, nã olhando q' assi como elle foy extreme no cometer & seruir (de maneira que veyo ao estado em que se vio) assi o era, no que lhe parecia que seus seruiços mereciam. Porque nam podia ver a calidade do tempo, se nam a de seus seruiços, pelo muito que lhe custaram. E dizia q' era nacido por nam dizer que sua estrella era na guerra vecẽr os reis immigos: com a arte

---

[1] His great soul was never cast down. [2] Slights.

[3] To require and insist on a yearly income of a conto. A conto is one million. If a conto of reis is meant, it would be equal to about £200.

[4] Marvelled at, not seeing that...

[5] So he was in what appeared to him that his services merited.

warfare, readines in resolving, prudence in conseruing, and great loialtie and patience with many seruices vnto his king and master. In which of all these he had most contentation it cannot easily be determined. Wherefore your noble Grace may see, that this treatie and the others were made with sighes and afflictions which his inferiour will might have raised vp in him against his superiour reason. Neither was he willing to take for his remedie that which that great Turke *Zelim* sonne to the great *Mahumet* did, for he tooke Constantinople and died in Rome, who vsed to make himselfe drunke, because he would not remember the great estate which he lost: nor yet woulde he give eare vnto those things which many of his friends would tell him, wishing he would settle his mind out of the kingdome (for otherwise he should neuer be able to live): whereunto he answered, that in this point he would rather be compared vnto the great *Timocles* the Athenian, then to be like the excellent Romane *Coriolanus*. Which is a goodly example of a true and faithfull Portugall. Though it were not so as I doe say,

Or rather Themistocles.

---

de pelejar & presteza de concluir, & a prudencia no conseruar, & ao seu rey & senhor com muytos seruiços & gram lealdade & paciencia, & de quael dellas tinha mais contentamento, se nam sabia determinar. Pello que vossa illustrissima senhoria pode ver, q' este tractado & os outros foram feytos de sospiros & afflições de animo affligido, q' forçadamente contra a parte superior, a inferior lhe auia de dar. Nam querẽdo tomar por remedio o que tomaua aquelle gram turco Zizimo filho do gram Maamede, q' tomou Costantinopla, & morreo em Roma, q' se embebedaua por se nam alembrar do grande estado que perdera. Nem o que muitos de seus amigos lhe dauam, dizendo que se possesse fora do Reyno, que doutra maneira nam teria vida. Ao qual respondia que nesta parte mais queria ser comparado ao gram Timocles Atheniense, que ao excellente Romano Curiolano. O que he hum gram exemplo de lealde Portuguesa, posto que nam sey como o diga:

yet I doe heare, that the hospitals be full of the most faithfull subjects to their prince and country.[1] Wherefore by all reason this treatie ought to be of your Grace favoured, setting apart all oversights, if there be any, in this worke, of the author.[2] I being not able to attaine vnto the vnderstanding of the contrary. God prosper your Grace with long life and increase of honour.

---

porque tambē o he, que dos leais estam cheos os hospitaes. Pello que com razão este tractado deue ser de vossa illustrissima senhoria fauorecido, & leuar em conta algūs descuidos se os na obra ouuer que por nam ser neste final corregido & emendado, pello proprio autor pode auer. Cuja vida & estado nosso senhor prospere.

---

[1] What a great example of Portuguese loyalty, supposing even that it be not as is said: why, moreover, is it that the hospitals are full of loyal persons?

[2] The work not having been finally corrected by its author.

DISCOVERIES IN DIFFERENT TIMES AND SEASONS, AND ABOUT THOSE WHO FIRST NAVIGATED.[1]

WHILE I had a desire to gather together some olde and some new discoueries, which haue beene made by sea and by land, with their iust times and situations; they seemed to be two things of so great difficultie, that being cõfused in the authors of them, I determined once to desist frõ any such purpose. For touching the course of time the Hebrewes declare, that from the beginning of the world to the flood were 1656 yeeres. The Seuentie Interpreters make mention of 2242. And S. Augustine reckoneth 2262. In the situations likewise there be many differences. For

Augustine de Ciuit. Dei, lib. xv, cap. 20.

DESCOBRIMENTOS EM DIUERSOS ANNOS & TEMPOS, & QUẼ FORAM OS PRIMEIROS QUE NAUEGARAM.

QUERENDO ajũtar algũs descobrimentos antiguos & modernos, que por mar & terra sam feytos, cõ suas eras & alturas (como sam duas cousas tã difficultosas) achey me tam confuso como os autores delles, que determiney desistir do tal proposito. Porque os Ebreos dizem que da criaçam do mundo ao diluuio ouue. 1656 annos. E os setenta interpretes. 2242. Sancto Agostinho 2260 & tantos. E assi nas alturas ha muytas differenças: porque nunca se ajunta-

[1] This is the rendering of the Portuguese; it differs from the heading prefixed by the translator, which will appear more properly as the title.

there neuer sailed together in one fleete at sea from ten pilots to the number of 100, but that some of them found themselues by reckoning in one longitude and other some in another. But[1] considering better with my selfe, that the difficulties are opened and the differences amended by others of more exact judgement and vnderstanding therein, I purposed notwithstanding to proceede in this worke[2] of discoueries.

Some there be that say, that the world hath fully beene discouered; and they alleage this reason, that as it hath beene peopled and inhabited, so it might be frequented and navigable, and the rather for that the men in that age were of a longer life, and of lawes and languages almost one.

Contrarie opinions touching the discouerie of the world.

There be others of a contrarie opinion to this, holding that all the earth could not be knowne, nor the people conuersant one with another. For though it had been so once, yet the same would haue beene lost again by the malice of men, and the want of justice among the inhabitants of the earth. But bicause the best and most famous discoueries were made by sea, and that principally in our times, I desire[3] to

---

ram em hũa armada de dez pilotos atè cento, que hũs nam estinessem em hũa altura, & outros em outra. Mas por ser emmendado de outros que ho melhor entendam, me despus a fazer isto, ainda q' algũs digam que ho mundo foy jaa descuberto & possam allegar pera isso, que assi como foy pouoado, podia ser frequentado, & nauegado. E mais sendo os homẽs daq'lla idade de vidas mais compridas, leys, linguvagẽs, quasi todas hũas. Outros tem disto ho contrario, q' dizem que nam podia a terra ser toda sabida, & a gente, cõmunicada hũa com a outra, porque qũado fosse se perderia polla malicia & sem justiça dos habitadores della.

¶ E porque os mõres descobrimentos & mais compridos foram por mar feytos principalmẽte em nossos tẽpos, desejey saber quaes

---

[1] But being corrected by others of better judgment.

[2] Although some there be, etc.

[3] Desired?

knowe who were the first discoverers since the time of the flood. Who were the first discouerers since the flood.

Some affirme that they were the Greekes, others say the Phœnicians, others also the Egyptians. The people of India agree not hereunto; affirming that they were the first that sailed by sea: namely, the *Tabencos, which now we call the Chinois. And they alleage for the proofe of this, that they be y^e^ lords of the Indiaes, even vnto the Cape of Bona Sperança, and the Island of S. Laurence, which is inhabited by them and al along the sea; as also the Jauaes, Timores, Celebes, Macafares, Malucos, Borneos, Mindanaos, Luçones, Lequeos, Japones, and other islands, being many in number, and the firme lands of Cauchin-China, Laos [Siamis], Bramas, Pegu, Arracones, till you come vnto Bengala: and besides this, New Spaine, Peru, Brasil, the Antiles, with the rest adioining vnto them, as appeareth by the fashions and maners of the men and women, and by their proportions, hauing small eies, flat noses, with other proportions to be seene. And to this day many of these ilands and countreies are called by the names of Batochina, Bocho-China,

* The people of China say they were the first sailors by sea.

The inhabitants of the West Indies descended from China.

---

foram os primeiros inuentores disto despois do deluuio. Hũs escreuem que os Gregos, outros dizẽ que os Fenicios, outros querem q' os Egipcios, os Indios nam consintem nisso, dizendo q' elles foram os primeiros que nauegarão, principalmente os Taybencos, a que agora chamamos Chins, & alegam pera isso serem ja senhores da India, ate ho Cabo de boa esperança, & a ilha de Sam Lourẽço por ser pouoada delles ao lõgo da praya & os Iaos, Timores, Selebres, Macasares, Malucos, Borneos, Mindanaos, Luçoes, Lequios, Japões, & outras Ilhas que ay muytas & as terras firmes dos Cauchenchinas, Laos, Siamis, Bremas, Pegus, Arracões, ate Bengala: & alem disto a noua Espanha, Peru, Brazil, Antilhas, & outras cõjuntas a ellas, como se paresce nas feiçoẽs dos homẽs, molheres, & seus costumes, olhos peq'nos, narizes rombos, & outras proporcoẽs q' lhe vemos. E chamarẽ

which is as much to say, as the countreies of China. Further it appeareth by histories, that the arke of Noe rested upon the north parts of the mountaines of Armenia, which stands in 40 degrees and upwards: and that immediately thereupon Scythia was first peopled, for that it is an high land and appeared first after the flood. And seeing the prouince and countrey of the Tabencos is one of the chiefest of all Tartarie, as they report, it is to be thought[1] that they were of the most ancient inhabitants, and men of the most ancient nauigations[2] [since in them that country terminates on the east], and the seas being as calme as the riuers be in those parts [by cause of] lying between the Tropicks, where the daies and nights do not much differ, as well in the howers as in y^e^ temperature: where there blow no outragious windes, to cause the waters to rise or be troubled. And by late experience it is found, that the small barks wherein they saile haue onely a great high bough in the

The seas betweene the Tropicks very calm.

---

ainda agora a muytas destas ilhas & terras Batochinas, Bocochinas, q' querē dizer terras da China.

¶ Alem disto os nossos escritores deyxarão escrito q' a arca de Noe, se assentara da parte do norte nos mōtes Darmenia, q' está de xl. graos pera cima & que logo daly fora a Scithia pouoada por ser terra alta, & primeyro das agoas descuberta. E como a prouincia de Thaibencos, seja hūa das principaes da Tartaria (se assi he como dizem) bem se mostra ferē elles dos mais antiguos pouoadores & nauegadores, pois nelles se acaba aquella terra da parte do leuante, & os mares sam tam bōs de nauegar como os rios destas partes por jazerē artre os tropicos onde dias & noytes, nam fazem muyta differençia, assi nas oras como na quentura: por onde nam ha ventos tam destemperados que aleuantem as agoas, nem as façam soberbas, & por experiencia o vemos nos pequenos barcos em q' nauegauão com hum ramo por masto & vella, & hū

---

[1] Shewn.

[2] The most ancient peoplers and navigators.

middest of the barke, standing insteed both of mast and saile, and the master holdeth onely an oare in his hande to stirre withall: and so they saile swiftly along the coast; and the rest of the passengers sit onely upon certaine poles, which are fastened in the barke, which they call catamarones, and so they passe without rowing.[1] An high bough instead of mast and saile.

It is further said, that the people of China were sometimes lords of the most part of Scythia, and sailed ordinarily along that coast, which seemeth to reach vnto 70 degrees toward the north. Cornelius Nepos is the author of this, who particularly affirmeth, that in the time that Metellus, the fellowe consul of Afranius, was proconsul in France, the king of Sueuia sent vnto him certaine Indians, which came thither in a ship[2] from this countrey, comming by the north and by the flats of Germanie. And it is probable that they were people of China, for that they from 20, 30, and 40 degrees vpwards haue strong ships and clynchers,[3] that can well brooke the seas, and indure the cold and intemperature of such northerly regions. As for Cambaia there is ship- Pomponius Mela, lib. 3.

---

remo na mão com q' gouernã, corrẽ muito mar & costa. E assi em hũs paos a que chamão Catamarões, em q' se escancham, ou assentam, & vam com outro remando. E querẽ ainda q' estes Chins fossem senhores da mõr parte da Scithia, & q' nauegassem toda sua costa, que pareçe estar ate setẽta graos da parte do norte.

¶ Cornelio Nepote referido, assi nolo aproua, onde diz, que Metelo colega de Afranio, estando por consul em França, el rey de Sueuia lhe mandara certos Indios, que vierão em hũa nao cõ mercadorias de sua terra pella parte do norte, aas prayas de Alemanha: & segundo isto deuia ser da China, por estar de vinte, trinta, corenta graos pera cima, & tẽ naos fortes & de pregadura que podiam soffrer mares & terras tam frias & destemperadas como aquellas: que as nãos de Cambaya, que tambem dizem auer muitos

[1] Also logs of wood called "catamarans," on which they either squat or sit astride, and get along with the others by paddling.

[2] With goods of their country. [3] Well secured by nails.

ping also in it, and the people by report haue vsed the seas many yeeres: but it seemeth not that they were any of them which came into France; for that they trafficke onely to Cairo,[1] and are men in deed of little trafficke and lesse clothing.

Joseph. Antiquit. Judaic. lib. i, ca. 5.

As for those which escaped the destruction of the flood, they were therewith so amazed, that they durst not descend into the plaines and lowe countreies, but kept the hils. And we reade of Nimrode, who 130 yeeres after the flood built the Tower of Babell, intending thereby to saue himselfe if there should come any more such floods.

Therefore it seemeth, that they which first came to be sailers were those which dwell in the east in[2] the prouince of China: although others contrariwise hold them which dwell in[3] the west, as in Syria, to haue vsed the trade of the sea soonest after the flood. But this contention about the antiquitie of nauigation I leaue to the Scythians and Egyptians, who were at great variance and difference in this matter; for each of them chalenged vnto themselues the honour of the first sea trauaile. But omitting all iars and differences

Justinus, lib. 1.

---

annos que no mar andam, não parecem pera isso por ser cozeitas de Cairo, & os homēs de pouco trabalho & vestido.

¶ Tambem os que escaparam do diluuio ficarão tam assombrados q' nam ousaram deçer aos baxos. Mēbroth, depois delle cento & trinta ānos, fez a torre de Babylonia, com entençã de se saluar nella vindo outra chea. Pello que parece q' os que mais cedo ao mar chegarão, ora fossem os que hiam ao Leuante & prouincia da China, ora os q' viessem ao Ponente ao fim da Syria aquelles q' primeyro ali pouoassem seriam os q' nauegassem, ho mais deixo aos Scyrios, & Egypcios, q' tiueram grādes debates

[1] The translator has misunderstood the expression, "cozeitas de Cairo:" it means "sewn together with coir rope," as the Massoolah boats on the Coast of Coromandel at this day.

[2] Which went to the East and to the, etc.

[3] Which came to the West to the ends of Syria.

thereabouts, I will apply myselfe to my purposed discourse, and speake of that which histories haue left in record.

There be some wel seene in antiquities, which say that in the 143. yeere after the flood, Tubal came by sea into Spaine, whereby it seemeth that in those times nauigations were vsed into our parts out of Ethiopia. Berosus. The first nauigation after the flood, 143.

And they also say farther, that not long after this, the queene Semyramis went against the Indians in that riuer wherof they tooke their name, and therein gaue battaile vnto the king Stabrobates, wherein he lost a thousand ships. Which being credible by the ancient historie, proueth manifestly that in those parts, in those times were many ships, and the seas frequented in good numbers. Diodorus Siculus. lib. ii, cap. 5.

In the 650. yeere after the flood there was a king in Spaine named Hesperus, who in his time, as it is reported, went and discouered as far as Cape Verde and the Island of S. Thomas, whereof he was prince.[1] And Gonsaluo Fernandez, of Ouiedo, the chronicler of antiquities,[2] affirmeth, that in his[3] time the Islands of the West Indies were discouered, and called somewhat after his name Hesperides: Berosus. Gonsaluo Fernandez de Ouiedo, lib. ii, cap. 3. Generalis Hist.

---

sobrisso : porq' todos q'rē adquirir a si esta hōra, & eu vir ao pōto do q' os nossos ātepassados deixarā escripto.

¶ Aquelles que de antiguidades se prezarão, dizem que no anno de 143 depois do diluuio, viera Tubal por mar a Espanha: por onde parece q' ja naquelle tēpo se nauegaua a nossa Ethiopia. E estes mesmos contam, que depois disto não muyto tempo a Raynha Symiramis fora contra os Indios : & naquelle rio de q' elles tomaram ho apellido, dera batalha a el rey Escorobatis, na qual elle perdera mil nauios: por onde parece que naquellas partes auia muytos, & muytos annos que se nauegauam.

¶ No anno de 650 depois do diluuio, ouue hū rey em Espanha que se chamou Hispalo, em cujo tempo diz que foy descuberto ate

[1] A mistranslation, "the Island of St. Thomas and Princes' Island," these islands are in the Bight of Biafra.

[2] The Antilles. [3] This.

Plinius, lib. vi, cap. 31.

and he alleageth many reasons to prove it, reporting particularly that in 40 daies they sailed from Cape Verde vnto those islands.

There are others that say that the like was done from this cape vnto the Islands of S. Thomas, and the Isle De Principe, and that they be the Hesperides, and not the Antiles. And they doe not differ far from reason: seeing in those times and many yeeres after they did vse to saile onely along the coast, not passing through the maine ocean sea; for they had neither altitude nor compasse then in vse, nor any mariners so expert.

The ancient nauigation was along the coast, not far into the maine ocean.

[According to the opinion of writers] it cannot be denied but that there were many countries, islands, capes, isthmos, and points, which now are grown out of knowledge, because the names of them are found in histories. But the age of the world and force of waters haue wasted and consumed them, and separated one countrey from another, both in Europe, Asia, Africa, New Spaine, Peru, and other places

Length of time and force of waters haue much altered the situation of manie places.

---

o Cabo verde, & algũs querem dizer que a ylha de Sam Thome, & Principe. E Gonçalo Fernandez de Ouiedo que fez as coronicas das Antilhas, que neste tempo fossem ylhas ja descubertas, & do nome deste rey se chamassem Esperidas: & alega muitas razões pera ysso, & aquelles quarẽta dias q' nauegauam do Cabo verde a estas ylhas. Mas outros querem dizer que o mesmo se fazia deste cabo â ilha de sam Thome, & Principe, q' estas sam as Esperidas: & nam as Antilhas. E nã se apartam da rezam muyto, poys naq'lle tẽpo & despoys muytos annos se navegou mais ao longo da terra, que pelo mar Oceano, nẽ auia altura, nem agulha, nem gẽte do mar podia ser tam esperta.

¶ Segundo a openiam dos q' escreueram nam se pode negar que nam ouue muytas terras, ilhas cabos, ismos, angras, enseadas, que os tempos & as agoas teram gastadas & apartadas hũas das outras, assi na Europa, como em Africa, Asia, & Noua Espanha, Peru, & outras que sam descubertas, & estam occultas pella continua differença que tem a humidade d'agoa, com a sequidam da terra. Diz

that have been discovered, but have been hidden by the continual struggle going on betwixt the water and land.]

Plato saith in his dialogue of Timæus, that there were in ancient times, in the ocean sea Atlanticke, certaine great islands and countries named Atlantides, greater than Afrike and Europe: and that the kings of those parts were lords of a great part of this our countrey: but with certaine great tempests the sea did ouerflow it [with all it contained], and it remained as mud and shingle, so that in a long time after no ships could passe that way. Plato in Timæa.

It is also recorded in histories, that fast by the Island of Cadiz, towards the Straights of Gibraltar, there was a certaine[1] island which was called Aphrodisias, well inhabited and planted with many gardens[2] and orchards, and yet at this day we haue no knowledge of this Aphrodisias, but onely a bare mention of it in ancient authors. The said Island of Cadiz is further said to haue been so large and big, that it did ioine with the firme land of Spaine. Plinius. lib. iv, cap. 22.

The Islands of the Açores were sometimes a point[3] of the mountains of Estrella, which ioine vnto the sea ouer the The Islands of the Açores sometimes ioined to the firme land.

Platam em os diologos de Thymeo Eclisio, que ouue antigamente no maar oceano Athlantico grandes ilhas & terras chamadas Athlantides, mayores que Africa & Europa, & que os reys daquella terra senhorearam[4] muyta parte desta nossa: & cõ grande tormenta se fundio com tudo o que tinha, & ficou tanto lodo & ciscalho, que se nam pode por ali nauegar muyto tempo. E assi escreueram, que junto da ilha de Calex, contra ho estreyto auia hũas ilhas que se chamauam, Frodisias, bem pouoadas, & frequentadas com muytos jardins, pomares, & ortas, de que ja agora nam temos outra memoria, se nam o que representa a escriptura.

¶ A mesma ilha de Calex se affirma ser tamanha que se ajuntaua aa terra de Espanha, & q' as ilhas dos Açores era hua ponta

---

[1] Were certain islands.
[2] Flower and kitchen.
[3] Or spur.
[4] Governaram.

towne of Syntra. And also from Sierra Verde or the greene mountaine, which adioineth vnto the water hard by the citie of Sasin in the land of Cucu (which is the selfe same Island of Mouchin, where Algarbe is) come[1] the Islands of Porto Santo and Madera.

All islands haue their rootes running from the maine land.

For it is held as a true and vndoubted veritie, that all islands have their roots running from the firme land, though they be neuer so farre from the continent: for otherwise they could not stand firme.

Eratoshenes apud Strabonem, lib. i, page 26.

There are other histories which say, that from Spaine vnto Ceuta in Barbarie men sometimes trauailed on foot vpon drie land, and that the Islands of Sardinia and Corsica did ioine the one with the other, as also did Sicilia with Italie, and Negroponto with Greece.

Huls of ships and ankers found on mountaines farre within land.

We read also that there were found hulles of ships, ankers of iron, and other memorials of shipping vpon the mountaines of Suissa farre within the land: where as it seemeth now no salt water or sea euer came.

In India also, and in the land of Malabar, although now

---

das Serras da Estrella, que se mete no mar na villa de Cintra, E que a Serra Verde que se mete nagoa jũto da cidade de Sasim em Teracucu, que he a propria de Mouchim, que do Algarue, & que em estas arrebentam as ilhas do Porto sancto & a Madeira, porque dizem que todas as ilhas tem as rayzes na terra firme, por muyto apartadas q' estẽ della, que doutra maneyra nam se sosteria. Outros querem que Despanha a Ceyta se passase por terra, & q' as ilhas de Cerdenha & Corcega se juntasse hũa cõ outra, Cecilia com Italia, Negroponte com a Grecia. Assi contam q' acharam cascos de naos, ancoras de ferro, nas montanhas de Suissa, muy metidas pella terra, oude parece q' nũca ouue mar, ne agoa salgada.

¶ Tambem dizem que na India & terra do Malabar q' he ta-

---

[1] Have broken off.

there be great store of people, yet many writers affirme that it was once a maine sea vnto the foot of the mountaines; and that the Cape of Comarim, and the Island of Zeilan were all one thing. As also that the Island of Samatra did ioine with the land of Malacca by the flats of Caypassia; and not farre frō thence there stands now a little island, which few yeeres past was part of the firme land that is ouer against it.

Furthermore it is to be seene, how Ptolemey in his tables doth set the land of Malacca to the south of the line in three or fower degrees of latitude, whereas now it is at the point thereof, being called Jentana, in one degree on the north side, as appeereth in the Straight of Cincapura, where daily they doe passe through unto the coast of Sian and China, where the Island of Aynan standeth, which also they say did ioine hard to the land of China: and Ptolomey placeth it on the north side far from the line, standing now aboue 20. degrees from it towards the north, as Asia and Europe now stand.

Well it may be that in time past the land of Malacca and

---

manha & tam pouoada foy ia tudo mar, ate o pè da Serra: & q' o Cabo de Comorim, & a ilha de Ceilao era tudo hūa cousa, & a ilha de Samatra q' fora pegada cō a terra Malaca, por hūs baixos d' Capasia, & iūto de la està hua ylheta q' não ha muito q' ella & a terra firme tudo era hūa cousa. Ptolomeo em suas taboas pōe esta terra de Malaca ao Sul da linha, em tres ou quatro graos daltura, ficando agora a ponta della, que se chama Ojentana em hum grao da banda do Norte (como se vee no estreito de Sincapura), onde cada dia passam pera à costa de Syão, & China, onde està a ilha de Aynão, que tambem dizem q' foy junta cō a terra da China q' Ptolomeo assenta da parte do Norte muyto alem da linha, ficando agora mais de vinte graos della da parte do Norte, de maneira que assi Asia como Europa, ambas agora estam desta banda.

¶ Bem podia ser q' nos tempos passados, a terra de Malaca &

China did end beyond the line on the south side, as Ptolemey doth set them foorth: because it might ioine with the point of the land called Jentana, with the islands of Bintan, Banca, and Salitres being many that waies, and the land might be all[1] slime and oaze; and so ye point of China might ioine with the Islands of the Luçones, Borneos, Lequeos, Mindanaos, and others which stand in this parallele: they also as yet hauing in opinion that the Island of Samatra did ioine with Java by the channel of Sunda, and the Islands of Bali, Anjane, Sambaua, Solor, Hogaleao, Maulua, Vintara, Rosalaguin, and others that be in this parallele and altitude, did all ioine with Jaua [and form one land]; and so they seeme outwardly to those that descrie them. For at this day the islands stand so neere the one to the other, that they seeme all but one firme land; and whosoever passeth betweene some of them may touch with the hand the boughs of the trees on the one and on the other side also. And to come neerer to the matter, it is not long since, that in the east the Islands of

At this isle of Bali the Hollanders were 1596, and haue largely described it.

China fossem acabar alẽ da linha de banda do Sul, como Ptolomeo as pinta, porque pegaria aa ponta da terra D'ojentana cõ as ylhas de Bintão, Banqua, & Salitres, q' ha por ali muitas, & seria a terra toda mociça: & assi a ponta da China, com as ylhas dos Luções, Borneos, Lequios, Mindanaos, & outras que jazẽ nesta corda, que tambem tem por opiniao aindagora, q' a ylha de Samatra, foy pegada com a Iaua, pello canal de Sunda, & a ylha de Baly, Anjane, Simbaba, Solor, Hogalcao, Maulua, Vintara, Rosolanguim, & outras q' ha nestacorda & alturas, todas foram pegadas cõ a Iaua & a terra hũa, & assi o parece quẽ as vée defora, porq' aindagora ha nestas partes ylhas taõ juntas hũas cõ as outras, q' parece tudo hũa cousa, & quẽ passa per antrellas, vay tocãdo cõ a mão os ramos do aruoredo dhũa banda & outra. E nam ha muyto tepõ q' ao Leuante das ylhas de Bãda se fundiram muitas: & tambẽ

---

[1] Solid land.

Banda were diuers of them overflowen and drowned by the sea. And so likewise in China about nine score miles[1] of firme ground is now become a lake, as it is reported. Which is not to be thought maruellous; considering that which Ptolemey and others haue written in such cases, which here I omit, to return to my purpose.

Nine score miles of firme ground lately drowned in China.

After the flood, 800 yeeres, we reed that the citie of Troy was builded by the Dardans, and that before that time they brought out of the Indies into Europe by the Red Sea, spices, drugs, and many other kindes of marchandises, which were there more abundant than now they be. Whereunto, if credit may be given, we may conceaue that the sea was of old haunted and frequented, seeing that then they of the east had so much and so greate trafficke with them of the west, that they brought their merchandise vnto an hauen which was named Arsinoe, being that which at this day is called Suez, standing in 30 degrees on the north part of the Arabian Gulfe. It is also by authors farther written,

800 yeeres after the flood was trade of spices by the Red Sea.

Arsinoe, now called Suez.

---

dizē agora q' na China se alagarā mais de sesenta legoas de terra: por onde se nāo deue auer por muito o q' Ptolomeo & outros antigos deixarā escripto, q' tambem eu deixo por tornar a meu proposito.

¶ Depois do diluuio 800 annos, diz q' foy fundada a cidade de Troya pellos Dardanos, & q' antes disto traziā das Indias a Europa pelo mar Roxo, especiarias, drogas, & outras muitas & diuersas mercadorias q' hi auia naquelle tempo mais q' agora. E se assi foy isto bē se pode dar credito q' auia muyto tempo q' os máres se nauegauam, pois naquelle tinham tanto comercio ho Leuante com ho Ponēte q' se traziam estas mercadorias a hū porto q' se chama Arsinoe, q' querē dizer algūs, q' seja aquelle q' agora dizemos Çuez q' està em trinta graos da parte do Norte neste estreyto Arabico.

¶ Declarão mais os escriptores, que deste porto d'Arsinoe, Suez

---

[1] Seventy leagues.

Plinius, lib. 6, cap. 29.

that from this hauen of Arsinoe or Suez [or whatever it may be called], these marchandises were carried by carauans, or great companies of carriers vpon camels, asses, and mules, vnto the Leuant sea vnto a city called Casson, standing on the coast in 32 degress of latitude, yeelding vnto euery degree 17 leagues and an halfe, as the maner is. And there are by account from the one sea to the other 35 leagues, or 105 miles. These carriers, by reason of the heate of the countrey, trauailed in the night onely, directing themselues by stars and by marks of postes and canes, which they used to sticke in the ground as they went. But after that, because this course and iourney had many inconueniences they changed and altered the same twise, to find out the most commodious way.

Strabo, lib. 17, pag. 560.

900 yeeres after the flood. Strabo, lib. 17.

900 yeeres or there about after the flood, and before the destruction of Troy, there was a king in Egypt called Sesostris, who, perceiuing that[1] the former courses and passages for the carrying of marchandises by men and beasts were chargeable to the one and most painfull to the

---

(ou como lhe quiserdes chamar) traziam estas mercadorias em carauanas de camelos, asnos, & azemolas, ao mar de leuante, a hũa cidade q' está nelle em xxxij graos daltura que se chama Cazõ, auerà por aquelle hũ mar a outro xxxv legoas: dãdo a cada grao xvii & meyo, como se costumaua: por la terra ser quẽte & d'area nam andauã se nam de noite, gouernãdose por estrellas, de q' tinham conhecimento & por balisas de paos & canas q' na terra tinhã metidas. Vẽdo q' esta estrada nam era tal como elles desejauam, diz q' duas vezes ho mudaram.

¶ Nouecentos annos pouco mais ou menos despoys do diluuio antes da destroiçam de Troya ouue hũ rey no Egypto q' se chamou Sesotres, o qual vendo q' estes caminhos & diligencias q' eram feytas nam escusauã muytos custos, homẽs, bestas, carregas &

[1] These journeys involved loading and unloading with great labour to man and beast.

other, prouided to haue a way or streame cut out of the land from the Red Sea vnto an arm of the riuer Nilus, which rūneth vnto the citie Heroum, that by the means thereof ships might passe and repasse with their marchandises from India into Europe, and not be discharged till they came into Italie. So that this Sesostris was the first king which built great caracks to trauaile this way. But this enterprise for all that took little effect. For if it had, Africa had then been made as an island all compassed with water, being no more ground between sea and sea, then the space of 20. leagues or 60 miles. Plinius, lib. 6, cap. 29.

About this time the Græcians gathered together an army or fleete, which now is called Argonautica, whereof Jason and Alceus were captains-general. Some say they went from the Isle of Creta, others from Græcia. But whence soeuer they departed, they sailed through the Proponticke Sea and Saint George's Sleeue vnto the Euxine Sea, where some perished, and Jason thereupon returned backe into Greece. Alceus reported that he was driuen with a tempest to the lake Mæotis, where he was forsaken of al his company, and they which escaped with great trauaile, passed through Diodorus Siculus, lib. 4, cap. 4. The lake Mæotis.

---

descarregas, determinou fazer hūa vala do mar vermelho a hū braço do rio Nilo, q' vay ter â cidade de Seroum, por onde as naos podessem ir & vir cō as mercadorias das Indias a Europa, sem serē tiradas, nē descarregadas ate Italia. E porisso foy este o primeiro rey do Egipto q' mādou fazer carracas grandes pera este caminho, o qual nam teue effeito por que se ho tiuera ficaua Africa em hūa ilha toda dagoa rodeada por nam ter mais de vinte legoas este jsmo de terra.

¶ Neste meyo tempo dizem que os Gregos fizeram hūa armada que chamão dos Argonautas, & hiam por capitães della Jasom & Alceo, hūs querem que partissem da ilha de Creta, outros da Grecia, como quer que seja, foram polo mar Pontico & braço de sam Jorge ao mar Euxino, onde se perderā. Jasom tornou a Grecia, Alçeo diz que com tormenta foy ter a lagoa Meotis, onde

Shipping of great antiquities in the Germaine Sea.

by land vnto the ocean sea of Almaine, where they took shipping, passing the coasts of Saxonie, Frisland, Holland, Flanders, France, Spaine, Italie, and so returned vnto Peloponessus and Greece [as far as the province of Thrace], discouering the most part of the coast of Europe.

Strabo. lib. 2, pag. 26.

Strabo, alleaging Aristonicus the grammarian, sheweth, that after the destruction of Troy, Menelaus the king came out of the straights of the Levant seas into the sea Atlanticke and coasted Africa and Guinea, and doubled the Cape of Bona Speranza, and so in time arriued in India; of which voyage of his there may be many more particulars gathered out of the histories. This Mediterrane Sea was also sometimes called the Adriaticke, the Ægæan, and the Herculean sea, with other names, according to the lands, coasts, and islands which it passeth by, running into the great sea Atlanticke, along the coast of Africa.

1 of Kings, 9. 2 Chron., 8.

In the yeere 1300 after the flood, Solomon caused a nauie to be prepared on the Red Sea, at an hauen called Ezeon Geber, to sail to the East India, where by opinion standeth

---

se desfez de todo, & os que escaparam cõ muito trabalho, atrauessaram por terra ao mar Oceano Dalemanha õde se embarcaram, & por la costa de Xaxonia, Frisia, Holanda, Flandres, França, Espanha, Italia, tornaram a Peloponeso, ou Morea, & Grecia, ate a prouincia da Tracia, deixando descuberto per costa a mór parte da Europa.

¶ Strabon citando Aristonico, diz que despois da destruiçã de Troya, el Rey Menalao sahio do estreyto & mar do leuante ao Athlantico, & costa de Africa, & Guine, & dobrou ho cabo de Boa esperança & em certo tempo foy ter á India. Disto se pode tomar aos autores mais astreyta conta. Este mar Mediterraneo, tambem se chamou Adriatico, Egeo, Herocleo, & outros nomes, segundo as terras, costas & ilhas, que banha ao mar grande Athlantico & costa de Africa.

¶ No anno de 1300, despois do diluuio mãdou Salamão fazer hũa armada no mar do mar roxo que se chamaua Eylam, para ir a leuante da India onde dizem estar aquella jlha & terra a que

the islands called Tharsis and Ophir. This nauie was three yeeres on this voyage, and then returned, and brought with them [much] gold, siluer, cypres, [and pine wood]. Whereby it seemeth that those places and islands were those which now be called the Luçones, Lequeos, and Chinaes. For we know few other parts from whence some of those things are brought, or wherein nauigation was so long since vsed.

It is left vs also in histories, that a king of Egypt called Neco, desiring greatly to ioyne the Red Sea with the riuer Nilus, commanded the Phœnicians to saile from the straight of Mecca to the farther end of the Mediterrane Sea, to see if it did make any turne backe againe vnto Egypt. Which commandement they obeied, sailing towards the south all along the coast and countrey of Melinde, Quiloa, Sofala, till they came to the cape of Bona Esperança, finding the sea[1] continually on the left hand: but when they had doubled the cape, and found the coast[2] continually on the right hand, they maruailed much at it. Herodotus, lib. 4.

Notwithstanding they continued their course forward

---

chamauam Tarcis & Offir, & q' poseram tres annos neste caminho, de q' trouxerã muito ouro, prata, aciprestes, pinho. Poronde pareçe que aquellas terras & jlhas deuiam ser as q' agora chamão, Luçoes, Lequios, & Chinas, por que nã sabemos lá em outras partes auer prata, aciprestes, pinhos nẽ nauegaçã de tãtos annos.

¶ Tambẽ deyxaram escripto os passados q' ouue hũ Rey no Egipto q' se chamou Neco, q' desejou muyto ajuntar ho mar roxo cõ ho rio Nillo, & mãdou aos Fenicios que deste estrèito de Meca nauegassem ate ho fim do mar Mediterraneo pera ver se ternauão ao Egipto, elles assi ho fizerão, indo ao sul ao longo da costa & terra de Melinde, Quiloa, Sofala, ate ho cabo de boa esperança ficandolhe sempre ho sol á mão esquerda. Mas dobrando este cabo, & vendo ho sol à mão direita, espantaranse muyto: cõ tudo fizeram ao Norte seu caminho pella costa de Guinè, & mar

[1] Sun. This means probably that the sun rose on their left. [2] Sun.

toward the north al along the coast of Guiney and the Mediterrane Sea, till they came backe againe into Egypt, whence they first went out. In which discouerie they remained two yeares. And these are thought to be the first that compassed by sea all the coast of Afrike, and sailed round about it.

Aristoteles. lib. de mirandis in natura auditio.

In the yeere 590 before the incarnation of Christ, there went out of Spaine a fleete of Carthaginian marchants, vpon their owne proper costs and charges, which sailed toward the west through the high seas to see if they could finde any land: and they sailed so farre, that they found at last the islands which now we call the Antiles and Noua Spagna: which Gonzalo Fernandes de Ouiedo saith were then discouered, although Christopher Columbus afterwards by his trauaile got more exact knowledge of them, and hath left vs an euident notice where they be. But all these historians, which wrote of these Antiles before, as of doubtfull and vncertaine things, and of places undiscouered, doe now plainly confesse the same to be the countrey of Noua Spagna.

Gonzalo Fernandes de Ouiedo, lib. 2, cap. 3, of his generall historie.

Didorus Siculus, lib. I, cap. 3.

In the yeere 520 before the Incarnation, and after the

Mediterraneo ate tornar ao Egipto dende partirão, & poserão dous annos neste descobrimento, & querem algũs que fossem os primeyros, que o fizerão & andassem a costa Dafrica toda em roda.

¶ No ãno de 590 antes da encarnação de Christo partio de Espanha hũa armada de mercadores Cartaginẽses feita à sua custa, & foy cõtra ho Ocidente por esse mar grande ver se achauã alguã terra: diz q' forão dar nella, e que he aq'lla que agora chamamos Antilhas & noua Espanha que Gonçalo Fernandez de Ouiedo, quer que neste tempo fosse ja descuberta, ainda que Christouão Colom nos deu della mais vera certeza, & todos os que escrèuerã como falão em cousa duuidosa & terra não descuberta, logo acodem com esta da noua Espanha.

¶ No anno de 520 antes do nacimẽto de Christo dizem q'

setting out of the aforesaid army, Cambyses, king of Persia, tooke Egypt; after whom succeeded Darius the sonne of Histaspis, and he determined to make an end of the enterprise which king Sesostris had begun, if they had not told him that the Red Sea was higher then the land of Egypt, and that by meanes of the salt sea comming into the river Nilus, all the prouince would haue been lost and vndone for hunger and thirst. For the fresh water of the riuer Nilus doth overflowe the whole countrey, and the inhabitants [and cattle] haue no other water then that for their drinke: whereupon he left his first purpose of prosecuting that enterprise.

A digression.

Now by the way I shall not swarue much from my matter, if I speake a word or two of some things incident to this discourse.[1] The Egyptians say that [in their country the human race was created, and that in it are still produced] they had in their countrey certaine vermine like vnto[2] rats, wherof many be halfe like earth and the other halfe like a vermine. One kinde of them keepe the water, and another kinde the land.[3] For my part I

Plinius, lib. 9, cap. 58, de miribus Nili.

Cambisis rey da Persia tomou ho Egypto, ao qual socedeo Dario filho de Histaspis, determinou de dar fim â empresa q' el rey Sesostres começara, selhe nam fizeram certo q' ho mar Erithreo era mais alto q' a terra do Egipto & chegando a agoa salgada ao rio Nillo perderse hia esta provincia á fome & sede, porque delle se rega, & os moradores & gados nã bebẽ outra agoa pelo que deixou de auer fim esta obra.

¶ Ainda que hum pouco me aparte do preposito, nam deixarey dir tocãdo, em algũas cousas em que vou falando, por dar repouso a tam largo caminho. Tinhã, os Egypcios, q' em sua terra se criaua a geraçam humana, & que ainda agora naçem nella hũs bichos tamanhos como ratos, & se vée muytos meyo torrão, & meyo bicho, ate de todo se despedir da terra: cuydo que sam estes

[1] To give repose on so long a journey.

[2] As big as.

[3] This translation is wrong: the sense seems to be that several

thinke that these be they which breake the serpents[1] egges, whereof there are many in the riuer Nilus, which also be called crocodiles: which in times past by report were so inchanted, that thereby they could not hurt any persons. But when they were deliuered from their inchantment[2] made by the Egyptians arte, and letters, then they endeauoured to kill people, wilde beasts and cattell, doing very much harme, specially those which liue in the water, which oftentimes come to the land, and liuing altogether on land become very strong poison.[3] The people beyond the citie of Cairo vse to fish for them and eate them, and they take their heads, and set them vpon the walles of their citie.

Joannes Leo Africanus, lib. 9, cap. de Nilo.

Of these crocodiles it is written, that they lay themselues [on the sand] along by the riuer with their mouthes open, and that there come vnto them certaine white birds, little bigger then thrusshes, which flie into the mouth of the crocodile, and picke out the filthines which is betweene his teeth, and in

Plinius, lib. 8, cap. 25.

Joannes Leo Africanus, lib. 9.

---

os que quebram os ouos aos lagartos, que ha muytos no rio Nilo, a que tambē chamão Cocodrilhos. E querem ainda q' em tempos passados fossem encantados, por onde nam fáziam mal a nenhūa pessoa, mas despois de desfazerem sua figura de chumbo, com suas letras Egipcias, tornaram a matar a gente, alimarias, gados, & fazer muyto dāno, principalmente os que saem dagoa, & se vam pela terra dentro, que sam muyto mays peçonhētos que os que ficam no Nilo, que estes pescam da cidade do Cayro pera bayxo, & os comem, & poē as cabeças polo muro.

¶ Tambē se escreue que estes lagartos se deytā na area ao longo de ribeira com a boca aberta, & que vem hūas aues brancas, poueo mayores que mebroas, & se metem dentro, & comem aquella

---

look upon themselves as half beast, half worm, until they take leave of the land altogether.

[1] Lizards. [2] Literally, but after undoing their figure of lead.

[3] Much more poisonous than those that remain in the Nile.

his iawes, wherewith he is greatly pleased: but for all that the crocodile would close his mouth and deuoure the bird, if nature had not prouided the bird a sharpe pricke as it were, growing out of his head, wherewith he pricketh the crocodile in the mouth; which causeth him to gape wide, and so the bird flieth away without harme; yet there come by and by other of those birds, which make an end of cleansing his mouth.

In the same riuer there are also many beastes like vnto horses, and vpon the land certaine fowles like vnto cranes, which warre continually with serpents, that come thither from Arabia, and kill many of them. Which birds,[1] as also the vermine, which eate the egges of the crocodiles, are greatly esteemed of the Egyptians. Hippopotami. Ibis.

(But now to returne to my matter, and to proceede in the discoueries): in the yeere 485 before the incarnation of Christ, Xerxes, the king of Persia, commanded Saraspis his nephew to goe and search and discouer India: who according to the precept vndertooke the voyage, and went through the straight of Gibraltar, [which lie in 36 degrees north

---

çugidade q' tem antre os dentes, & gengiuas, com q' folgam muyto: mas com tudo cerram a boca pera as comerem, o que fariam se a natureza as nam prouera de hũ ossinho agudo que tem na cabeça com q' os picam no ceo da boca, de maneyra que a abrem, & ho passaro se vay embora, mas logo vẽ outros que acabam de alimparlha. Tambẽ ha nesta ribeira muytos caualos marinhos, & na terra quantidade de cegonhas, q' tem guerra com as serpes que ali vẽ de Arabia, & matam muytas dellas, & assi estas cegonhas, como os bichos que comẽ os ouos dos lagartos, sam dos Egipcios muy venerados.

¶ No anno de 485 antes da encarnaçam de Christo, diz que mandou el Rey Xerxes a Sataspis seu sobrinho descobrir a India, o qual sahio pelo estreito de Gibaltar fora, que estaa em trinta &

---

[1] Storks.

latitude], and passed the promontorie of Africa, which now we call the Cape of Bona Sperança, standing southward betwixt 34 and 35 degrees in latitude,[1] and being weary of so great a nauigation turned from thence backe againe, as Bartholomew Diaz did in our daies.

Plinius, lib. 2, cap. 67.

Before the comming of Christ 443[2] yeeres, Himilco, and Hanno his brother, Carthaginian captaines, gouerning that part of Spaine which is now called Andaluzia, departed from thence each one with his nauie. Himilco, sailing towards the north, discouered the coasts of Spaine, France, England, Flanders, and Germanie. And some write farther, that he sailed vnto Gotland, and came to the island of Thule, or Island, standing vnder the circle Arcticke, in 24 degrees from the north pole,[3] and continued in his nauigation two yeeres, till he came vnto this Island, where the day hath in June 22 houres, and in December the night also hath 22 houres, whereby it is there wonderfully cold.

[It seems that the inhabitants of this island cry out

---

seys graos da parte do norte, & passou ho promontorio Dafrica, que he aquelle que agora chamamos Cabo de boa esperança, que esta da parte do sul em trinta & quatro pera cinco graos daltura. E enfadado de tam gram nauegaçam se tornou, como Bertolameu diaz em nossos tempos fez.

Antes do Saluador do mundo vindo 440 annos Himeleõ, & Annõ seu hirmão, capitães Cartagineses, gouernando a Andaluzia, partiram della cada hum com sua armada Himeleõ contra ho norte descobrio a costa de Espanha, França, Frandes, & Alemanha: & algũs querẽ que a Gotica, & q' chegasse á ilha de Thüli, em Hislãda, que está debaixo do circulo artico em sessenta & seys graos do norte, & poserã nisto dous annos na viagem, ate chegarem a esta ilha, que tem os dias de Junho de vinte duas horas, & as noytes de Dezembro doutro tanto, polo que he frigidissima. Parece que

---

[1] Which is in thirty-four or thirty-five degrees south latitude.

[2] 440 ?

[3] Sixty-six degrees north latitude.

and groan, whereby it is said to be the Purgatory of St. Patrick.

This island has three mountains which throw out fire from the base, while the summit is covered with snow, and in one of these which is called Ecla, the fire is so mild that tow will not burn, while at another part it has such force that it burns up water and consumes every thing.

It is also said that there are in this island two fountains, one like melting wax, the other always boiling, and turning every thing thrown into it to stone, keeping its proper form.

Further, there are in this island bears, foxes, hares, crows, falcons, and other birds, and wild cattle: and there is so much grass that it is mown twice for the cattle; and often they are taken from it that they may not burst.

There are also very large and misshapen fish, and so many as to frighten mariners, and with their bones and ribs a church has been built. There is no bread, wine, oil (olive) nor whereof to make it; they get light from fish oil, for everywhere God provides.]

---

bradam & gemẽ os homẽs nella, por onde dizem que ali he ho purgatorio de sam Patricio.

¶ Tem esta ylha tres montes que deitá fogo pe lò pee & encima està neuada, & em hũ destes q' se chama Ecla, he o fogo tam brando que nam queima a estopa, & per outra parte tẽ tanta força q' arde nagoa, & consume a toda. E assi dizem q' ha nesta ylha duas fontes, hua como cera derretida, & outra que sempre ferue, & toda a cousa q' lhe deitam dentro se conuerte em pedra, fícãdo em sua propria figura. Ha mais nesta ilha vssos, raposas, lebres, coruos, falcões, & outras aues, & alimarias brauas: & he tanta a erua, q' asegão duas vezes, pera q' os gados passem[2]: & muitas vezes os tiram della, porque não arrebẽtem de gordura. Ha hi muy grandes & difformes pescados, & tanto que põe aos nauegantes medo, & de seus ossos & costas fizeram hũa igreja. Na ahi pão, vinho, azeite, nem de que o fação, alumiam se com o do pescado, porque em toda parte prouee a diuina magestade.[3]

[1] Pascem ?

[2] Omitted in the English translation.

Now the other brother Hanno tooke his course towards Africa and Guiney, and[1] he discouered the Fortunate Islands, which we call the Canaries, and besides these he discouered others, as the Dorcades, Hesperides, and the Gorgades, which now be called the Isles of Cape Verde. There he with his company went along the coast till they doubled the Cape of Bona Speraça, and taking their course towards the land, they went along by it vnto another cape, named Aromaticum, which is now called Guardafu, standing south-east[2] from Cape Verde in 14 degrees toward the north; and he came to the coast of Arabia, standing in 16 and 17 degrees, and was five yeeres in this voiage before he returned backe into Spaine. There be others that say that he passed not beyond Sierra Leona, but peopled it,[3] and afterwards discouered as far as the line. But it seemeth he made a full nauigation, because he spent so much time in his travaile. It is reported that the inhabitants of the Cape of Bona Speraça are great witches,[4] and inchanters of certaine

Plinius, lib. 6, cap. 31.

The nauigation of Hanno in Greeke herevnto agreeth.

Enchanted snakes.

¶ Ho capitão Anou tomou na mão a costa Dafrica & Guine, & dizem que descobrio as ylhas bem afortunadas, que agora chamamos Canarias, & alem dellas outras q' dizem Dorcadas, Esperias, & as Gorganas, que se agora chamão do cabo verde: & forão assi ao longo da costa, ate dobrar o cabo de boa esperança, & tomãdo na mão a terra foram ao longo della, à outro cabo q' se chama Aromatico, & agora de Guarda fuy, que esta leste hoeste com ho verde em quatorze graos da parte do norte: & q' chegara à costa Darabia q' está em dezeseys & dez & sete: & posera cinco ãnos ate tornar à Espanha. Outros querem q' nam passasse da serra Lioa, & q' Publio[1] despois delle descobrisse ate a linha.

¶ Mas parece q' nam faria tam cõprida nauegaçam pois gastou tanto tempo neste trabalho. Algũs contam agora q' os abitadores desta costa do cabo de boa esperança sam grandes feiticeiros,

[1] It is said.

[2] East, west, or in the same parallel with Cape Verde. Modern observations place Cape Verde in 14° 43', Cape Guardafui, 11° 50'.

[3] And that afterwards he made public the discoveries as far as the line.

snakes,[1] which they bring to such seruice and commande- Enchanted snakes.
ment, that they keepe their churches and churchyards,[2] gardens, orchards, barnes, and cattell,[3] as well from wilde beasts as from theeues. For if they see any to doe or to intend hurt, the snake windes her selfe to him[4] or them, holding them as prisoners, and commanding her yoong ones to call their masters vntill they be taken. If the theeues be many, or the wilde beastes of so much strength, that they dare not meddle with them, then they goe vnto the house of him with whom they doe liue; and if it be in the night time, they giue so many strokes,[5] that at the last they doe awake them, to cause them to prouide for their defence.

A certaine Italian called Aloisius Cadamusta writeth, that he being in the discouerie of Guiney, in the kingdome of Budimol, lay in the house of Bisborol, his sonnes sonne; and lying in his bed, he heard a great noise and many blowes[6] giuen about the house; whereupon Bisborol rose, and went out: and when he came againe, Cadamusta demanded of him where he had been: and he answered that

---

encantadores, principalmẽte de cobras: & trazem ñas tanto a seu mando, que lhes guardam as semẽteiras ortas, pomares & suas grãjarias, assi de ladrões, como dalimarias: & se vem algũs fazer dano cinginse com elle, & tem nos presos & mandão aos filhos chamar seus amos & entreganos: & se a gente he muita, ou alimaria poderosa cõ que se não atreuem, vamse a casa daquelle com que viuẽ, & se he de noyte dam tantos Assouios & chirlos, ate q' os acordã pera jr defender, o que lhe entregaram. Aluici Cadamosto Italiano, escreue que se achou no descobrimento de Guine no reyno de Budimol, em casa de Bisborol seu neto: & jazendo na cama ouuio grãdes siluos darredor da casa, o q' Bisborol se leuantara da cama & sayra pola porta afora: & quando tornara Cadamosto lhe pergũtara donde vinha, contoulhe como açudira as cobras q' o chamaram. O que se nam deue danar por muyto,

[1] Chiefly of snakes.
[2] Not churches, etc.—seed grounds.
[3] Not barns, etc.—farms.
[4] Round him.
[5] Hisses and screams.
[6] Whistlings.

he had been with his cobras or snakes, which called him. [Which cannot be very hurtful, because] in the Indias there be many of these kinde of snakes, and some full of poison, which notwithstanding the Indian people vse to carrie about their necks, and put them into their bosomes and vnder their arms: which at some soundes that the people make will dance, and doe diuers things at commandement.

Odericus writeth the like of one that brought multitudes of partridges to Trapezunda.

There was a Portugall that sometime told me, that beyond the Cape of Bona Sperança, towards Sofala, Quiloa, and Melinde, where he had been, there were certaine birds, which would come to[1] the Black Moores at their call, and according as the Moores did remoue,[2] so the birds would doe, from one tree to another: and they vsed to follow them till they did light vpon some tree, from whence they could[3] not remooue. And as the negros went[4] vp the tree they should finde waxe and honie thereupon [and knew they were to take it, and the bird remained there], not knowing whether it grewe there naturally or not.[5] In the same countrey also vnder ground in ant-holes they did finde much honie

---

porq' na India ha muytas & muy peçonhentas, & trazēnas derredor do pescoço, metēnas pelos peytos & saenlhes polos braços fazēlhe som q' bailā, & o mais q' lhe mādā.

¶ Assi me disseram algūs Portugueses que por aquella costa do cabo de boa esperança pera Sofala, Quiloa, Melide andaram, que auia certos passaros, a que acodiā os negros a seu chamado & como os viam mudauanse dhūa aruore em outra: & os cafres os seguiam ate q' se punham em algūa donde se nāo mudauam: & em olhamdo os negros pera cima viam mel & cera, sobiā a tomalo, e ho passaro ficaua ali. Nam me souberam dizer se era isso natural, seho faziam per ter dali mantēça. Tambē affirmaua q' debaixo da terra emformigueiros se achaua muyto mel & cera que as formigas

[1] Awaken.

[2] And when they saw them they would change from one tree to another.

[3] Did.

[4] Looked.

[5] Nor could he tell me whether this was their nature, or whether they did it to find food.

and waxe, which the antes did make, being somewhat bitter. Vpon the sea coast also they found certaine fishes, which commonly went vpright in the water, hauing the faces and natures of women, which the fishermen of those places were acquainted with[1] [and if they sold them they gave ["the purchasers?"] an oath that they should sleep with them, and if they did not do so they bought them ["back?"] for on no other terms would they give anything for them.][2] Mermaides.

In the yeere 355 before Christ, it is said that the Spanyards sailed through the maine sea till they came vnto the flats[3] of India, Arabia, and those coasts adioyning whereunto they caried[4] diuers marchandises, which trade they vsed in great ships. And, sailing to the northwest, they came vnto certaine[5] flats, which, with the flowing of the sea, were couered, and with the ebbe were discouered, finding there many tunnies of great bignes, where they commonly vsed to fish them to their great profit, because they were the first vntill that time that they had seene, and were greatly esteemed. Aristotel. de mirandis in natura auditis. Strabo, lib. 2, pag. 681, de Gaditanorum longinqua nauigatione & ingentibus nauibus.

---

faziam hũ pouco agro. Diziam mais que nesta costa auia grandes pescados que andauã ho mais do tempo nagoa dereytos, & tinham rostos & naturas de molheres, com que os pescadores se desenfadauã quãdo os tomauam: & se os vendiam dauanlhes juramento se dormiram com ellas, & se ho nam fizeram entamlhas compravam, & doutra maneyra nam lhes dauam por ellas nenhũa cousa.

¶ No anno de 535 antes de Christo, diz que nauegauam os Espanhões por todo ho maremagno, ate chegarẽ ás prayas das Indias, Arabia, & suas costas, donde leuauam & traziam muytas & diuersas mercadorias: & andauam nestes tratos & outros por diuersas partes do mundo em grandes nauios: foram ao noroeste dar em hũs canaes & baixos que com a crecẽte do mar se cobriam, & com ho mingoante apareciã, dõde achauam muytos atuũs de marauilhosa grãdeza, fizeram nelles grandes pescarias por serẽ os primeyros que ate aquelle tempo tinham visto, & por muyto estimados.

---

[1] With which, when they were taken, the fishermen did amuse themselves. [2] This appears to be something approaching the meaning.
[3] Shores. [4] Whence they brought. [5] Channels and.

The time of Alexander Magnus, as appeereth by the ages of the world, was before the comming of Christ 324 yeeres: we all know that he was borne in Europe; but he trauailed into Asia and Africa, and passed through Armenia, Assyria, Persia, and Bactria, standing northerly in 44 degrees of latitude,[1] which is the farthest countrey in longitude wherein he was in all his iourneyes. From thence he descended into India by the mountaines of Imaus, and the valleyes of Paropanisus, and prepared a nauie in the riuer Indus, and therewith passed into the ocean sea, where he turned by the lands of Gedrosia, Caramania, and Persia, vnto the great citie of Babylon, leauing Onesicritus and Nearcus captaines of his fleete, which afterwards came vnto him by the straight of the Persian sea, and vp the riuer of Euphrates, leauing that countrey and coast discouered.

After this, Ptolemey raigned king of Egypt, who by some is reputed to haue been bastard sonne vnto Philip, father of the foresaid Alexander the Great. This Ptolemey, imitating the forenamed kings Sesostris and Darius, made a trench

¶ Alexandre magno segundo polas idades parecem, foy antes da vinda de Christo 324 ānos como todos sabemos, era natural da Europa, passou em Asia, & Africa, & atrauessou a Siria, Armenia, Persia Batuana, q' esta da parte do norte em xliiij graos daltura, q' he amayor, emq' se ele pos nesta jornada, dōde deceo á India polos montes Imāos & valles Paraponistos, e mandou fazer hua armada no rio Indo, e por elle foy sayr ao mar Oceano, donde se tornou por terra de Gedrosia, Carmania, Persya, & Agram, cidade de Babilonia, deixando por capitães darmada Crito & Nearco, q' despois foy ter cō elle polo estreito do mar Persyco, & rio Neufrates acima, deixādo descuberta aq'lla terra & costa.

¶ Despois disso diz que socedeo por rey do Egipto Tholomeu, q' algus querem que fosse filho bastardo de Felipe pay de este grāde Alexādre: ho qual quis imitar a el Rey Secostres & a Dario & pera isso mandou fazer hū canal de cem pes em largo, & trīta

[1] Which is the greatest which he reached in this journey.

or ditch[1] of an hundred foote broad and of thirty foote deepe, and ten or twelue leagues in length, till he came to the bitter welles, pretending to haue his worke run into the sea from a mouth of the riuer Nilus, called Pelusium, passing now by the citie Damiata. But this thing tooke none effect; for that the Red Sea was thought to be higher by three cubits then the land of Egypt, which would haue overflowed all the countrey, to the ruine and loss thereof. Plinius, lib. 6, cap. 29.

In the yeere 277 before the Incarnation, succeeded in the gouernment of the kingdome one Philadelphus, who brought to passe that the marchandises should come out of Europe to the citie of Alexandria, upwards by the riuer Nilus, vnto a city named Coptus, and from thence to be conueyed by land to a hauen standing vpon the Red Sea, called Myos-Hormos; which way was trauailed in the night, the pilots directing themselues by the stars, which were expert in that practise. And because water was scant that way, they vsed to carrie it with them for all the companie; till, at the last, to auoide that trouble, they digged very deepe wels, and made large cisterns for the receipt of raine water, by which the way furnished with that commoditie, which at the first Strabo, lib. 17, pag. 560 & 561. Coptus. Myos-Hormos, now Cofir, on the Red Sea.

em alto, & dez ou doze legoas em comprido, ate chegar às fontes amargas cõ entençam de leuar esta obra ao mar do rio Nillo, q' se chama Peluzio, que entra na cidade Damiata: nam ouue effeito foi desejo, por se achar este mar vermelho ser mais alto tres couodos q' a terra do Egipto, & espalhandose por ella perderse hia tudo.

¶ No anno de 277 antes da encarnaçã de Christo, socedeo neste reyno Philadelphos, & ordenou q' viessem as mercadarias da Europa à cidade de Alexandria pollo rio Nillo acima, ate outra q' se chama o Copto: & della por terra as leuassem a hũ porto que esta em ho mar roxo que se chama Miosormo, andosse este caminho de noite, gouernandose pellas estrellas & pilotos que disso tinham conhecimento, & por esta estrada ser proue dagoa a leuauam pera toda a cõpanhia, ate que fizeram poços muy fundos &

[1] Canal.

it wanted, grewe, in continuance of time, to be the more frequented.

But whereas the straight way was dangerous by reason of flats and islands,[1] the aforesaid king, Philadelphus, with his armies, went on the side of Troglodytica, and in an hauen called Berenice caused the ships to arriue[2] which came out of India, being a place of more suretie and lesse perill; from whence they might easily carrie the wares to the citie of Coptus, and so to Alexandria. And by this meane Alexandria grew so famous and rich, that in those daies there was no citie of the world comparable to it. And to speake briefly and particularly of the abundance of trafficke there vsed,[3] it is left written for an assured truth, that in the time of king Ptolemey Auletes, father vnto Cleopatra, it yielded in customes vnto him yeerly seuen millions and a halfe of gold, although the trafficke was not then scant twenty yeeres old, by way of that citie.[4]

The cause of the greatnes of Alexandria.

Strabo, lib. 17, pag. 549.

Strabo, lib. 17, pag. 549.

But after that this prouince and countrey became subiect

---

cisternas com q' se sostem, de maneira q' ficou esta estrada mais frequentada.

¶ Dizem q' por este estreito ser perigoso de baixos, Ilhas, Restingas, foy este rey Philadelphos com seus exercitos da parte dos Trogoditas & em hum porto q' se chama Bereniche, mandou q' se descarregassem as naos que vinhã da India por ser lugar mais seguro & podiam chegar sem perigo donde as leuassem a cidade do Copto & dahy a Alexandria: polla qual causa foy esta cidade tam prospera & rica que dizẽ nam auer naq'lle tempo mais na redõdeza. Veyo este trato em tanto crecimento q' se escreue render em tempo del Rey Tholomeu Aulete pay de Cleopatra sete contos & meyo de ouro: & ainda naq'lla ydade nam auia mais de xx naos neste maneyo.

¶ Mas despois de vir esta prouincia, em poder des Emperadores

[1] And sandbanks.

[2] Ordered the ships to discharge.

[3] This traffick increased so much.

[4] Although there were not more than twenty large ships employed.

to the emperours of Rome, as they were greater in power and neerer in couetousnes, so they enhansed the customes; so that within a little time the citie yeelded double[1] the foresaide summe. For the trafficke grew so exceeding great, that they sent euery yeere into India a hundred and twenty ships laden with wares, which began to set saile from Myos-Hormos about the middle of July, and returned backe againe within one yeere.

The marchandise which they did carrie amounted vnto one million two hundred thousand crownes;[2] and there was made in returne of euery crowne an hundred. In so much, that by reason of this increase of wealth the matrones, or noble women, of that time and place, spent infinitely in decking themselues with precious stones, purple, pearles, gum benzoin, frankincense, muske, amber, sandal wood, aloes, and other perfumes, and trinkets, and the like; whereof the writers and historians of that age speake very greatly. Plinius. lib. 12, cap. 18.

Cornelius Nepos, alleaged by Plinie, maketh report of a king of Egypt that reigned in his time, called Ptolemæus Plinius, lib. 2, cap. 67.

---

de Roma, como eram mais poderosos, ou cobiçosos, em pouco tempo lhes rendeo o tres dobro: & veo em tanto crecimento, que mandauão em cada hum anno aa India cento & vinte naos de carrega, partiam de Miosormo meado Iulho, & tornauam dẽtro em hũ anno: as mercadorias q' leuauam, dizem q' valeriam hum milhão douro & dozentos mil cruzados, & no retorno faziam cento de hũ. Ea fora isto as matronas despendiã em cada hũ anno muyto infindo dinheiro em pedraria, pulpura, alsofre, bẽjoim, encenso, almiscre, ambar, sandalos, aguila, & outros cheiros & brinquinhos, nisto se affirmam os escritores daq'lle tempo.

¶ Tambẽ escreue Plinio, citando Cornelio Nepote que em su tempo ouue hum rey no Egipto q' se chamou Tholomeu latiro, &

---

[1] Three times the double.

[1] This may mean either one million of gold and two hundred thousand crusadoes,—or, one million two hundred thousand crusadoes.

Lathyrus, from whom one Eudoxus fled vpon occasion, and the better to auoid and escape his hands, he passed through the Arabicke gulfe, and the sea all along the coast of Africa and the cape of Bona Sperança, till he came vnto the island of Cadiz; and this nauigation by that course was, in those daies, as often vsed as now it is, if we may giue credit to the histories: which appeereth the more manifest by this, that Caius Cæsar, the sonne of Augustus, going into Arabia did finde in the Red Sea certaine peeces of those ships which came thither out of Spaine. It was a vse, also, long after those daies, to passe to India by land. For so did the kings of the Soldans and the princes of Bactria, and other famous captaines, who trauailing thither and into Scythia by land, had the view of these prouinces and countreyes so farre till they came that way vnto the west,[1] and to the seas thereof on the north part, whereunto many marchants then did trauaile.[2] Marcus Paulus Venetus writeth much hereof. And although at the first his booke was taken for a fabulous thing, yet now there is better

Paulus Venetus commended.

---

hu Edoxo fogindo delle pello golfam Arabico veyo polo mar ao lõgo da costa Dafrica & cabo de boa esperança à ilha de Calex, & querẽ ainda que se vsasse esta nauegaçam naquelle tẽpo como agora: pelo qual o filho de Cayo Cesar Augusto andando na Arabia achara neste mar Criteo pedaços de naos da feyçam das Despanha.

¶ Assi contam q' os reys dos Sudianos & principe dos Batrianos & outros capitães famosos forã por terra à India & Sythia, & ouuerã vista daq'llas prouincias & terras todas ate ho leuante & mares delles da parte do norte, & mercadores & caminhantes que se affirmam andarẽ por aquellas partes. Marco Paulo largas cousas escreue dellas ainda que o auiam por fabuloso ja agora lhe dão mais credito por acharem nomes de terras, cidades, villas, Angras, sitios & alturas conformes a suas escrituras.

[1] East.

[2] And merchants and travellers declare they have gone in those parts.

credit giuen vnto it; for that by the late experiences of the trauailers and marchants of these daies into those parts, the names of the countreyes, cities, and townes, [anchorages,] with their situations, latitudes,[1] and commodities are now found true, as he and other historiographers of that time haue reported.

In the 200 yeere before the Incarnation it is written, that the Romanes sent an armie into India by sea against the great Can of Cathaia, which, passing through the Straight of Gibraltar, and running to the northwest, found, right ouer against the Cape Finisterre, ten islands, wherein was much tinne. And they may be those which were called the Cassiterides, and being come to fifty degrees of latitude they found a straight;* and passing through it towards the west they arriued in the empire of India,[2] and fought with the king of Cathay, and so came backe againe vnto the citie of Rome. Which thing howsoeuer it may seeme either possible or not possible, true or not true, yet so I finde it left to be recorded in the histories of that time.

Cassiterides.

* The northwest passage, though the latitude be somewhat mistaken.

What histories may these be?

In the 100 yeere after the Incarnation of Christ, the emperour Traiane prepared an armie by sea vpon the riuers

---

¶ No anno de 200 antes da encarnaçã de Christo dizem q' os Romãos mandarão hua armada a India cõtra ho gram cão do Cathayo & saindo pello estreito de Gibaltar fora, correram ao Noroeste, & defronte do cabo de Finis terra acharam dez ilhas em q' auia muyto estanho, & deuião ser aq'llas q' chamão Cassiteriacs & posto em cincuenta graos daltura acharam hum estreito por onde forã a loeste a superior India, & pelejando com ho señor de Cathayo se tornaram à cidade de Roma, se he fabula ou certeza pula como a achey escrita.

¶ No anno de cento despois da vinda de Christo ho Emperador Trajano mandou fazer hũa armada nos rios Eufrates, & Tigres foy por elles as ilhas de Zizara, & estreito de Persya, sayram ao Mar

[1] And latitudes agreeing with his writings.

[2] Or Upper India.

Xiphilinus in vita Traiani.

Euphrates and Tigris, and departed from them and sailed to the islands of Zyzara, and passing the Straight of Persia, entred into the ocean sea, and sailed towards India all along the coast till he came to that place where Alexander had been, and there he tooke certaine ships which came from Bengala, of whom he learned the state of that countrey. But because he was then in yeeres and wearie with his trauaile, but especially because he found there small reliefe for his armie, he returned backe.

After that the Romanes had gotten the most part of the world, there were in that age made many and notable discoueries. But then came the Gothes, Moores, and other barbarous nations, and destroied all. For in the yeere 412 after the Incarnation of Christ, they tooke the citie of Rome: and the Vandales came out of Spaine and conquered Africa.

Rome taken by the Gothes, 412.

And in the yeere 450, the king called Atila destroyed many cities in Italie: at which time the citie of Venice began. And in this age the Frankes and Vandals entred into France.

The originall of Venice, 450.

In the yeere 474 the empire of Rome was lost, and fell from the Romanes to the Gothes.

Oceano da India, & por aquella costa nauegara alem donde Alexandre chegara, tomara naos que vinham de Bengala, de que se enformara daquella terra & por ser velho & cansado & achar nella pouco mantimento se tornara.

¶ Despois que os Romãos senhorearam a melhor parte do mundo se fizeram muytos & notaveis descobrimentos, mas vieram os Godos, mouros & outros Barbaros & destroirã tudo porq' no anno 412 depois da encarnação de Christo tomarão a cidade de Roma, & os Vandalos sayrã de Espanha a conquistar Africa. E no anno de 450 el rey Atilla destroyo muytas cidades d'Italia & começouse a de Veneza, & neste tempo os Francos, & Vandalos entrarão em França. E no anno de 474 se perdeo o Imperio de Roma & despois disto vieram os Longobardos a Italia no qual tempo andanam os demonios tam soltos pella terra que tomaram â figura de

And after this came the Lombards into Italie, namely in the yeere 560 [in this period devils were let loose on the earth, which took the form of Moses, and many of the deluded Jews were drowned in the sea].

Also about this time the sect of the Arrians preuailed greatly: and at this time one Merline, of England, was famous for his prophecies.

To be short, in the yeere 611 sproong vp the Mahumetane sect and Morisco regiment,[1] which by force inuaded both Africa and Spaine. The sect of Mahumet began anno 611.

By all this it may appeere, that in that age all the world was in a hurly burly, and all places very tumultuous [and for four hundred years was so defaced and benighted], in so much that trafficke and marchandise ceased: for no nation durst trade one with another, neither by sea nor land: nothing as then remained stedfast, neither in monarchies nor kingdomes, signiories, religions, lawes, artes, sciences, nor nauigations. Nor so much as the records and writings of such things did remaine, but were all burnt and consumed by the barbarous crueltie and vnbrideled power of the Gothes: who became so couetous and ambitious, that they purposed of themselues to begin a new world, and to roote Trafficke and nauigation cease. Ramusius, 1 vol., fol. 372, pag. 2.

Moyses, & os Iudeus enganados foram muytos no mar afogados Ea seita Arriana preualecia. E Merlim em Inglaterra foi neste tempo. E no anno de 611 foi Mahamede & os de sua seita, que tomaram por força Africa et Espanha.

¶ Assi que segundo paresce nestas idades todo mundo ardia, por onde dizem q' esteue quatro centos annos tam apagado, & escurecido que nam ousaua nenhum pouo andar dũa parte pera outra, por mar nem terra, tam grande abalo & mudança se fez em tudo q' nhũa cousa ficou em seu ser, & estado ossi monarchias como reynos, & señorios, religões, leis, artes, sciẽcias, nauegações escrituras q' disso auia, foy tudo queimado, & consumido segundo contã, porque os Godos eram tam cobiçosos da gloria mundana q' quise-

[1] Mahomet and those of his sect.

out the memorie, and blot out the knowledge, of all other nations besides.[1]

But they that succeeded after these times in the government of things, perceiuing the great and huge losse, that the Christian world had by the want of trafficke and ceasing of nauigation,[2] whereby those commodities and marchandises could not be spent, which before went ordinarily from one nation to another by the vse of trade; to the end that this decay and losse might be repaired, and the treasures of the east might be imparted with the west, as it was woont in the times of quietnes and peaceable liuing, they began to deuise a way to passe to India, which was not as the former way was by the Red Sea and the riuer Nilus, but a way of farther sailing and farther length and cost also.[3] For they brought their ware vp the riuer Indus, and there vnladed it, carrying it by land through the countrey of Paropanisus by carauans vnto the prouince of Bactria, and then shipped

Ramusius, 1 vol., fol. 373.

---

ram começar em si outro nouo mundo et q' do passado nã ouuesse nhũa memorias.

¶ Os que despois socederam sentindo tamanha perda e puerto[4] como era ho comercio & trato das gentes hũas com as outras, & q' nã podiam gastar suas mercadorias, nem auer as alheas sem este meo determinaram de buscar maneira como se nam perdesse de todo, & as mercadorias do leuante toruassem ao ponẽte como sohião. Desesperados de as trazeram pollo mar roxo & rio Nilo, abriram outro caminho, ainda q' muito mais comprido & custoso, porque as traziam pello rio Indo acima: & desembarcadas as passauã por terra & portas Peraponesas à prouincia de Batriana &

---

[1] The foregoing paragraph is very freely translated.

[2] And that neither could they dispose of their own goods nor have others without it, determined to devise means by which all might not be lost, but that the merchandize of the east might flow to the west as before.

[3] Despairing of bringing them by the Red Sea and river Nile they opened another route, though much longer and more costly.

[4] Prejuizo?

it in barks on the riuer Oxus, which falleth into the Caspian Sea, and so sailed ouer that sea vnto an hauen of the riuer Rha, named Citracan or Astracan, and so vpwards in the said riuer which now is called Volga; and as it appeareth they carried it to the citie of Nouogrode, in the prouince of Resan, which now belongeth to the great duke of Moscouia, standing toward the north in 54[1] degrees of latitude: and therehence they trauailed ouer land vnto the prouince of Sarmatia, vnto the riuer Tanais, which is the diuision of Europe from Asia; where they againe laded it in barks, and caried it downe the riuer, into the lake Mæotis, and to the citie of Caffa, which in ancient time was called Theodosia, which then belonged to the Genowais, who came thither for those wares in their galliasses or great ships.

A way by the riuer Oxus, the Caspian Sea, Volga, and ouer land to Caffa.

It is also left written, that the trade this way endured vntill the raigne of Commodita, emperour of Armenia, who[2] prouided for a better course, and commanded this trafficke of the spices to be conueied by the Caspian Sea, and so through the kingdome of Hiberia, which now is called Georgiana, and from thence they entred by the riuer Phasis,

Strabo, lib. 12.

---

embarcauanas no rio Oxo, que se mete no mar Caspio & yam a hum porto do rio Ram, q' se chama Sicatrum, et por este rio acima q' se agora diz Volga segundo parece as leuauam aa cidade de Nouogardia, que he agora do gram Duque de Moscouia, & está da parte do norte em 57 graos d'altura & atrauessauam por terra a prouincia de Sarmacia ao rio Tanais, q' a deuide da Europa, onde embarcauã & por elle abaixo as leuauã a alagoa Meotas & cidade de Cafa que antigamente se dezia Theodosia & por ser de Genoeses vinham por ellas as suas galeaças.

¶ E dizem que durou este trato ate ho tẽpo do Commodita Emperador Armenio que mãdou mudar este caminho ao rio Carius, na fim do qual desembarcauam & atrauessauam ho Reyno de Hiberia q' se agora diz Iorgiana, & tornauam a embarcar no rio

[1] 57 ?

[2] Ordered this route to be changed to the river Cariuscyrus or Kur.

now Phasso, into Pontus Euxinus, and so vnto the city of Trapezunda, standing in 40 and odde degrees of northerly latitude. And to that place came shipping for the marchandises out of Europe and Africa.

The marte of spices at Trapezunda, Ramusius ibidem.

It is further left recorded concerning this way of trafficke, that Nicanor determined or had already begun to open aboue 120 miles of land, which lieth betweene the Caspian Sea and Pontus Euxinus, that they might come and goe by water with their spices, drugs, and other commodities[1] there vsed. But[2] in the meane time this mischiefe happened, that Ptolemey Ceraunvs killed him, and by his death this woorthy and famous enterprise ceased without effect.

Strabo, lib. 11.

Plinus, lib. 6, cap. 11.

But the other way being also at last lost by reason of the wars of the Turks, it pleased God to open[3] another way to these marchandises [and others that were brought] from the isle of Samatra, the citie of Malacca, and the island of Jaua, vnto Bengala, and so carrying them vp the riuer Ganges vnto the citie of Agra, from whence they trauailed ouer

Another way to Boghar, and so by caravans into Persia by the riuer of Ganges.

Facis: & por elle hião ao mar de Latana & cidade de Trapezõda, q' está em quarenta & tãtos graos d'altura, onde vinhã por estas mercadorias as naos da Europa & Africa: & dizẽ ainda que Nicana determinaua ou tinha ja posto per obra de abrir mais de cento & vinte legoas de terra q' ha deste mar Caspio ao Euxinio pera que podessẽ yr & vir por agoa as especearias, drogas, & outras mercadorias que por aqui entam caminhauam, se ho nam matara Tholomeu Carauno, por onde nã executou seu generoso pensamento.

¶ Assi que perdido este caminho, pellas guerras do grão Turco, a industria humana abrio logo outro a estas mercadorias & a outras que traziam da ilha de Samatra, cidade de Malaca, ilha da Java: a enseada de Bẽgala, et pello rio Gãje acima as leuauam à cidade Dagra, donde atrauessauam por terra a outra que estaa no rio

---

[1] Which travelled this way at that time.

[2] He was killed by Ptolemey Ceraunus, whereby he did not execute his generous intention.

[3] Human industry opened.

land vnto another citie standing neere the riuer Indus, named Boghar,[1] where they discharged, bicause the citie of *Cabor[2] standeth too farre within the land,[3] being the principall citie of the Mogores.[4] From thence they went forward to the great citie of Samarcand, standing in the countrey of Bactria: and there the marchants of India, Persia, and Turkie met, bringing thither their seuerall commodities, as cloth of gold, veluets, chamolets, scarlet [carpets, felt] and woollen clothes, which were carried[5] to Cathay and the great kingdome of China: wherehence they brought againe gold, siluer, precious stones, pearles, silke, muske [camphor, aloes, sandal wood] and many other things of great value, and much rubarbe. After this [it is said] these marchandise, drugs, and spiceries were carried in ships vpon the Indian Sea vnto the Streight of Ormus, and to the riuers Euphrates and Tigris, and were vnladen in the citie of Balsara, standing in 31 degrees towards the north, and from

* Or Laor.

Samarcande.

Woollen cloth good marchandise for Cathay.

The way by Ormus and Balsara, and so to Aleppo and Barutti.

Indio que se chama Bacar, donde hiam pollo sertam dentro a cidade de Cabor, que he a principal dos Mogores: & dahi a gram cidade de Samarcante que estaa na prouincia de Batriana: & juntos os mercadores da India, Persia, Turquia, que traziam borcados, veludos, chamalotes, escarlatas, Alcatifas, fetros,[6] & outros panos de lám que hiam gastando ate ho Cathayo & gram prouincia da China: donde traziam ouro, prata, pedraria, Aljofre, seda, almisere, camfora, aguila, sandalos, & muyto ruybarbo, & outras cousas que ca tinham valia.

¶ Despois disto diz que leuarão estas mercadorias, drogas & especearias, em naos polo mar Indico ao estreyto Dormuz, & rio Eufrates & Tigres & as desembarcauam na cidade de Baçora, que estaa em trinta & hum grao ao norte. Dahi hiam por terra aa

---

[1] Bokhara or Bukkur. [2] Cabul ?

[3] Whence they went further inland to the city of Cabor, which is the capital of the Mogores.

[4] Moguls. [5] Which went to be consumed as far as. [6] Feltros ?

thence they were caried ouer land vnto the cities of Aleppo, Damascus, and Barutti, standing on the same side, in 35 degrees. And there the Venetian gallies or galliasses, which transported pilgrims into the holy land, came and receiued of those goods.

In the yeere 1153, in the time of Fredericke Barbarossa, it is written that there came to Lubec, a citie of Germanie, one canoa with certaine Indians, like vnto a long barge; which seemed to haue come from the coast of Baccalaos, which standeth in the same latitude that Germanie doth.[1] The Germaines greatly woondered to see such a barge, and such people, not knowing from whence they came, nor vnderstanding their speech, especially because there was then no knowledge of that countrey, as now there is: it may be credible that though the boate was small in respect of those huge seas, yet the winde and water might bring them thither:[2] as we see in these our days that the *Almadie*,

---

cidade Dalepo, Damasco, Baruti, que estaa da mesma banda em trinta & cinco graos: donde as vinham tomar as galees de Veneza, que traziam romeiros a casa sancta.

No anno de 1353,[3] em tempo do Emperador Federico Barba roxa, diz q' foy ter a Lubres cidade Dalemanha hũa nao cõ certos Indios em hũa canoa, que sam nauios de remo, parecendo-se aos tones de Cochim: porẽ esta canoa deuia de ser da costa da Florida bacalhãos & aquella terra, por estar na mesma altura Dalemanha: de que os Tudescos ficaram espantados do tal nauio & gente, por nam saberem donde eram, nem entenderem sua lingoagem, nem terem noticia daquella terra, como agora, porque bem os podia ali leuar ho vento & agoa, como vemos que trazem as almadias de Quiloa,

---

[1] There came to Lubeck a vessel bringing certain Indians in a canoe, which is a vessel propelled by oars, similar to the Cochin boats; but this canoe must have come from Florida, the country of cod fish, which lies in about the same latitude as Germany.

[2] Nevertheless it is quite possible that the winds and currents might bring them there, as we see, etc.

[3] 1153?

which is but a small boate, commeth notwithstanding from Quiloa, Mosambique, and Sofala, to the island of St. Helena, being a small spot of land standing in the maine ocean off the coast of Bona Sperança so farre separated.[1]

In the yeere 1300 after the comming of Christ, the great Soldan of Cayro commanded that the spiceries and drugs, and marchandises of India, should be carried through the Red Sea, as it was vsed before: at which time they vnladed on the Arabian side, at the hauen of Juda, and carried them vnto the house at Mecca, and the carriers of it were the pilgrims.[2] So that each prince vsed a custome to augment the honour and increase the profite of his countrey. And these Soldans had speciall regarde to Cayro, from whence the wares were carried vnto the countreyes of Egypt, Lybia, Africa, the kingdomes of Tunez, Tremessen, Fez, Marocco, Suz: and some of it was carried beyond the mountaines of Atlas vnto the citie of Tombuto, and the kingdome of the Jalophos; vntill afterwards that the Portu-

Joannes Leo Africanus.

Ramusius, 1 vol., fol. 378.

Tombuto.

Moçambique, Sofala, a ilha de sancta Ilena que he hum ponto de terra, que estaa naquelle gram mar daquella costa & Cabo de boa esperança tam separada.

¶ No anno de 1300 despoys da vinda de Christo ho gram Soldam do Cayro mandou q' tornassem as especiarias, drogas, mercadorias das Indias ao mar Roxo, como em principio acostumauam: somente que desta vez desembarcauam da banda de Arabia, & porto de Juda, as leuauam aa casa de Meca, & as carauanas q' hião a ella em romaria as traziam dõde cada hũ era, por ennobrecer sua terra, principalmente a cidade do Catro, dõde as passauam pola prouincia do Egipto, Lĩbia, Africa, ao reyno de Tunez, Tremecem, Fez, Marrocos, Sus, algũas leuauã alem dos montes Atlanticos á cidade de Tungubutum, & reyno dos Jalopsos, ates que os

[1] Far separated from that coast and the Cape of Bona Sperança.

[2] And the caravans that went there in pilgrimage carried them, each to ennoble or enrich their own country; principally to the city of Cairo, whence the caravans passed by the province of Egypt, Libia, Africa, to the kingdom of Tunez, etc.

gals did bring it about the Cape of Bona Sperança vnto the citie of Lisbone, as in place conuenient we purpose to shew more at large.[1]

In the yeere 1344, king Peter, the fourth of that name, reigning in Arragon, the chronicles[2] of his time report, that one Don Luis of Cerda, sonne vnto the sonne of Don John of Cerda, craued aide of him to goe and to conquere the isles of the Canaries, standing in 28 degrees of latitude to the north, because they were giuen vnto him by Pope Clement the First, which was a French man. Whereby in those daies there grew a knowledge of those islands in all Europe, and specially in Spaine: for such great princes would not begin nor enterprise things of such moment without great certaintie.

The Canarie Islands.

The Island of Madera discouered by Macham, an English-man.

About this time also the island of Madera was discouered [in 32 degrees] by an English man called Macham: who sailing out of England into Spaine, with a woman of his,[3] was driuen out of his direct course by a tempest, and arrived in that island, and cast his anker in that hauen,

---

Portugueses as trouxeram Polo cabo de boa esperãça aa nobre cidade de Lisboa, como se diraa a seu tempo.

¶ No anno de 1344 reynando dom Pedro Daragam ho quarto, dizem os coronistas de seu tẽpo, que lhe pedio ajuda dom Luys de la cerda neto de dom Joam de lacerda pera ir cõquistar as ilhas Canarias que estam em vintoyto graos desta mesma banda, por lhe serẽ dadas polo Papa Clemente vj natural de França. E segundo isto já naquelle tempo auia muyta noticia daquellas ilhas por toda Europa, quanto mays ẽ Espanha, porque tamanhos principes nam se auiam de mouer a esta empresa sem muyta certeza.

¶ Tambem querẽ que neste meyo tempo fosse a ilha da Madeira descuberta, que esta em trinta & dous graos, por hum Ingres que se chama Machim, que vindo de Inglaterra pera Espanha com hũa molher furtada, forã ter á ilha cõ tormenta, & fundiaram naq'lle

[1] At the proper time.

[2] Chroniclers.

[3] Having run away with a woman.

which now is called Machico, after the name of Macham. And bicause his louer[1] was then seasicke, he there went on land with some of his companie, and in the meane time his ship weyed and put to sea, leauing him there: whereupon his louer for thought died.[2] Macham, which greatly loued her, built in the island a chappell or hermitage to burie her in, calling it by the name of Jesus Chappell: and wrote or graued vpon the stone of her tombe his name and hers, and the occasion whereupon they arriued there. After this he made himselfe a boate all of a tree, the trees being there of a great compasse about, and went to sea in it with those men of his companie that were left with him, and fell with[3] the coast of Africke without saile or oare, and the Moores among whom he came tooke it for a miracle, and presented him vnto the king of that countrey: and that king also admiring the accident, sent him and his companie vnto the king of Castile.

In the yeere 1395,[4] king Henrie the third of that name reigning in Castile, the information which Macham gaue of this island, and also the ship wherein he went thither,

---

porto que se agora chama Manchico, de seu nome tomado, & pella amiga vir do mar enjoada sayo em terra com algũs da companhia, & a nao cõ tempo se fez á sea, & ella faleceo danojada. Machim q' a muyto amaua pera sua sepultura fez hũa ermida do bõ Jesu, & escreueo em hũa pedra o nome seu & della: & a causa q' os ali trouxera, & poslha por cabeceira: & ordenon hũ barco do tronco de hũa aruore, q' ali auia muyto grossos & embarcouse nelle com os q' tinha, & forã ter à costa Dafrica sem velas, nem remos, Os mouros ouuerá isto porcousa milagrosa, & por tal os apresentaram ao señor da terra, & elle pella mesma causa os mandou a el rey de Castella.

¶ No anno de 1393 reynando em Castela el rey dom Enrique iij pela enformaçam q' Machim desta ilha dera, & a nao d' sua cõpan-

---

[1] Mistress.

[2] And in the meantime the ships made sail and she died of grief.

[3] Reached.

[4] 1393 ?

moued many of France and of Castile to goe and discouer it, and the great Canarie: and they which went were principally the Andaluzes, the Biscaines, and the Guepuscoes, carrying with them many people and horses. But I know not whether the charge of that voiage was theirs or the kings. But by whom soeuer it was set out, they seeme to be the first that discouered the Canaries and landed in them, where also they tooke 150 of the islanders prisoners. Concerning the time of this discouerie, there is some difference among the writers, for some affirme this to be done in the yeere 1405.

The first discouerie of the Canaries by the Christians, 1405.

The chroniclers of Portugall haue this record, that after the incarnation of Christ 1411-16, [in the month of July], king John the first of that name king of Portugall, departed from the citie of Lisbon with the Prince Don Duarte or Edward, and Don Peter and Don Henry his sonnes, with other lords and nobles of his realme, and sailed into Africa, where he tooke the great citie of Ceuta, standing on the north side thereof, betweene 35 and 36 degrees in latitude: which was one of the principall causes of the enlarging of the dominions of Portugall.[1]

The first conquest of the Portugals in Barbarie, 1415.

This victorie was gotten by the helpe of the English as Walsingham writeth.

---

hia, moueo a muytos de França & Castela irē a descobrirla & a gram Canaria, principalmente Andalezes Bizcainhos, Lepuzcos: leuādo assaz gente & caualos, mas nā sey se foi isto a sua custa, se d'el rey: como quer que seja, querem q' fossem os primeiros que ouuessem vista das Canarias, & saissem nellas, & captiuassem cento & cincoēta pessoas outros querem q' fosse isto no anno de 1405.

Segundo os nossos cronistas deyxarā escripto, despoys da encarnaçam de Christo 1411 ou 16 annos, no mes de Julho partio el rey dō Joam o primeyro de Portugal da cidade de Lisboa, & o principe dom Duarte, & o ifante dō Pedro, & dom Aurique seus filhos, & outros senhores & nobres do reyno pera Africa, & tomaram a gram

[1] Spain. Ceuta was afterwards annexed to Spain, and finally ceded in 1668.

When they were come from thence, Henry, the kings third sonne, desirous to enlarge the kingdome and to discouer strange and unknowne countryes,[1] being then in Algarbe [at Cape St. Vincent] gaue direction for the discouery of the coast of Mauritania. For in those daies none of the Portugals had euer passed the Cape de Non, standing in 29 degrees of latitude. And for the better accomplishing of this discouerie, the aforesaid Don Henry prepared a fleete, and gaue commandement to the chiefe captaines to proceede in discouerie from the aforesaide cape forward:[2] which they did. But when they came to another cape named Bojador, there was not one of them that durst goe farther or beyond it:[3] at which fearefull and cowardly faintnes of theirs the prince was exceedingly displeased.

John de Barros. Asiæ, decad. 1, lib. 1, cap. 2. Cape de Non.

Cape Bojador.

In the yeere 1417, king John the second reigning in Castile, and his mother, Ladie Katharine, then vsing the gouernment, one Monsieur Ruben of Bracamonte, which

---

cidade de Ceyta, que está da parte do norte em trīta & cinco ate seys graos d'altura, que foy hũa das principays causas, alargarense os termos Despanha.

¶ Vindos de lâ, o ifante dom Anrique desejoso de acrecẽtar este reyno, & descobrir outro mũdo nouo, se assentou no algarue ao cabo de sã Vicente, donde começou a mandar descobrira costa de Mauritania, porque naquelle tẽpo ne nhũ Portugues passaua do cabo de Não, q' está em xxix graos daltura. E pera isto se por em effeyto, mandou ho Ifante aparelhar certos nauios: & deo aos capitães por regimento q' deste cabo por diante fosse seu descobrimento: elles assi o faziam, mas como chegauão a outro q' se chama Bojador, nenhũa pessoa ousaua auenturar a vida: de q' o Ifante andaua assaz agastado.

¶ No anno de 1417 reynando em Castela dom Joam ho ij & gouernando sua mãy dona Caterina, hum Mossem Rubem de Bra-

---

[1] Another new world.

[2] And instructed the captains that from this cape forwards should be his own discovery.

[3] Durst risk his life.

was then admirall of France, craued the conquest of the islands of the Canaries, with the title to be king of them, for a kinsman of his called Monsieur John Betancourt: which being granted him by the queene, and farther also partly furnished out, he departed from Siuill with a goode armie: but the chiefe or principall cause that mooued him to enter into this action, was to discouer and perfectly to take a view of the island of Madera, whereof Macham before had giuen so much information.[1] But for all that he went vnto the Canaries, and carried with him a friar called Mendo to be as bishop thereof, admitted by Pope Martine the fift. When they were landed they wonne Lancerota, Forteuentura, Gomera, and Ferro: from whence they sent into Spaine many slaues, honie, waxe, camfora or camfire, hides, orchall, figs, sanguis draconis, and other marchandises, whereof they made good profit: and this armie also as they report, discouered Porto Santo. The island that they inhabited was Lancerota, where they built in it a castle of stone for their better defence and securitie.[2]

The Canarie Islands conquered.

Porte Santo.

---

camonte que fora almirante de França, lhe pedira a cõquista das ilhas Canarias, cõ titolo de rey pera hũ seu parente, q' se chamaua Mossem Iam Betancor, & que a raynha lhas dera & ho ajudara. Partio de Seuilha com bõa armada, & querem ainda que a principal causa que a isto ho mouera era descobrir a ilha da Madeyra, que Machim achara: mas foram ter ás Canarias, leuando consigo hu Frey Mendo pera Bispo della, concedido pelo Papa Martinho quinto. Saidos em terra ganharam Lançarote, Forte vẽtura, Gomeyra, & ho Ferro, dõde mandaram a Espanha muytos escrauos, mel, cera, cãfora, couros, orchiga, figos, sangue de dragam, & outras mercadorias, em que fizeram bom dinheyro, por q' esta armada diz que descobrio a ilha de Porto sancto, assentaram em Lançarote, onde fizeram hum castelo de pedra & barro, cõ que sostineram o que tinham ganhado.

---

[1] Which Machan had found out. [2] To secure what they had gained.

In the yeere 1418 one John Gonzales Zarco, and Tristam Vaz Teixera, householde gentlemen vnto Don Henry the kings third sonne, perceiuing the desire that their master had to discouer new countreyes, and willing in that course to doe him some seruice, craued of him a barke, and licence to vndertake the action: which they obtained, and sailed to the coast of Africa: where they were ouertaken with a terrible tempest;[1] but they were succoured by falling with the land, and entring into an hauen called Santo, where they landed, and remained two yeeres. John de Barros, decad. 1, lib. i, cap. 2.

In the yeere 1420 they discouered the Island of Madera [and passed ouer to it], where they founde the chappell and the stone and tombe, whereupon the foresaide Macham had grauen his name.[2] There are others that write that a certaine Castillian, perceiuing the desire and fauour to nauigation which Don Henry had,[3] told him that they had found the Island of Porto Santo; which being but a small thing Barros, decad. 1, lib. 1, cap. 3. The chappell built by Macham found in Madera. Porto Santo

---

No anno de 1418 Vendo Joam gonçaluez ho zarco, & Tristam vaz teixeyra, caualeyros da casa do Ifante, os desejos que elle tinha de descobrir terra: & elles de ho seruirem na tal impresa, lhe pediram hum nauio & licença em que foram a este descobrimento, & junto da costa de Africa lhes deu tal tormenta que se nã poderam juntar a ella, & se perderam de todo se os Deos nam socorrera cõ lhes amostrar hũa terra & porto a que poseram nome sancto, onde se saluaram: & estiueram aqui dous annos. No anno de 1420 descobriram as ilhas da madeira, & se passaram a ella, onde ainda acharam a hirmida & pedra que contaua, como Machim ali estiuera. Outros dizem que vendo hum Castelhano os desejos que ho Infante tinha de descobrir nouo mundo, lhe dera conta como elles acharam a ilha do Porto sancto, & por ser

[1] And near the African coast they fell in with such a tempest that they could not reach it, and they would have been lost had not God succoured them by showing them a haven, which they named Sancto, where they saved themselves.

[2] Which Machan placed there, as already related.

[3] The desire the Infante had to discover a new world.

they made no reckoning of it. Don Henry sent Bartholomew Perestrello, John Gonzales Zarco, Tristam Vaz Teixera, and by the signes and likelyhoods that they had receiued, they went to Porto Santo, and there remained two yeeres: and after that, namely in the yeere 1420, they sailed also to the Island of Madera, where they found the memoriall and monument of the aforesaide Macham the English man.

As for Monsieur Betancourt, who entred into the conquest of the Canaries as is aboue mentioned, he was slaine in the middest of the action, and left behind him for his heire a kinseman of his called Monsieur Menante, who after that sold the said Islands of the Canaries vnto one Peter Barba of Siuill. There are other which speake otherwise, and say that the Monsieur John Betancourt went into France to prepare a new army about this conquest, and left there a nephew of his; who, because he heard no more of his vncle, and sawe that he could not maintaine the warres any longer, he solde the Canaries to Don Henry the king of Portugals third sonne, for a certaine thing that he gave him in the Island of Madera.

The Canarie Islands sold ouer to a Spanyard.

---

cousa pequena nam faziam della estima. Que foy causa de mandar la ho Ifante Bertolameu perestrelo, Joam gonçaluez hō zarco, Tristam vaz teyxeira: & polos sinaes & derrotas que ho Castelhano dera do Porto sancto, foram ter a elle & despoys de ali estar dous annos, no de 1420 se passaram á ilha da madeyra, onde acharam como Machim ali estiuera.

¶ Estando assi Mossem Joam Betancort na cōquista das Canarias (como he dito) dizem que ho mataram, & deixara por seu herdeiro hum parente que se chamaua Mossem Menante, & q' este as vendera a hum Pero Barba de Seuilha. Outros querē dizer q' Mossem Joam Betancort se fosse a França refazer de nouo pera esta conquista, & deixara aly hū sobrinho, & como nunca mays de là viera, vendo ho parente que nam podia sostentar a guerra, vendera as Canarias ao Ifante dom Anrique por certa cousa que lhe dera na ilha da Madeira.

In the yeere 1424 they write that the saide Don Henry prepared a nauie and armie to conquer these islands, wherein there went as captaine generall, one Don Fernando de Castro; and by reason of the valiantnes and warlike behauiour of the people they had the repulse: whereupon Don Ferdinando, considering the great charge, and little or no good successe, he gave ouer the action, and returned backe againe. After this Don Henry resigned ouer these islandes to the crowne of Castile, in consideration of the aides which Betancourt had receiued. But the Castillians agree not vnto this report. For they say, that neither the kings of Portugall nor Don Henry would render the islands, till they came in question before Pope Eugenius the fourth [a Venetian]; who fully vnderstanding the matter, gaue the conquest of the islands by order of iudgement vnto the king [Don John] of Castile in the yeere 1431, whereupon this contention ceased touching the title of the Canaries betweene the kings of Portugall and of Castile.

Barros, decad. 1, lib. i, cap. 12.

The Canaries came to the crowne of Spaine in the yeere 1431.

These islands being in number seuen, were called by the name of [the Blessed or] Fortunatæ, standing in 28 degrees

---

No anno de 1424 diz que mandou o Ifante fazer hũa armada para cõquista destas ilhas, hia por capitam mor della dõ Fernando de castro, & como as gentes dellas eram belicosas, defenderam bem suas casas. E vendo dom Fernando ho grande gasto q' fazia, se tornou, & despois ho Ifante alargou esta terra á coroa de Castella pellas ajudas q' Abetãcor dera. Mas os Castelhanos contam isto doutra maneira, que nem os Reys de Portugal nẽ o Infante dõ Anrique as quiseram alargar, atè chegarem a direito diante do Papa Eugenio quarto Venezeano, ho qual vĩdo isto deu a cõquista daquelas ilhas por sentença a el Rey dom Joam de Castella, no anno de trinta & hũ, por onde cessou esta contenda das Canarias ante os Reis de Portugal, & Castella.

¶ Estas ilhas das Canarias diz q' sam sete & q' se chamauã as Beatas ou bem Afortunadas, estão em vintoito graos da parte do norte, tẽ o mayor dia de treze oras, & a noite de outras tãtas, estam

to the north: where the longest day is but 13 howers, and the longest night as much, lying distant from Spaine 200 leagues, and from the coast of Africa 18[1] leagues. [In times past] the people were idolaters, and did eate their flesh raw for want of fire: they had no iron, and sowed without any toole: they tilled and raised the ground with (oxe hornes and) goats hornes. Euery island did speake a seuerall language. They tooke many wiues, and knew them not carnally vntill they had deliuered them to the superiours. They had diuers other (Paganish)[2] customes: but now the Christian faith is planted among them.

The ancient maners of the Canarians.

The commodities of these islands are wheate, barley, sugar, wine, and certaine birdes, called Canarie birdes, much esteemed in Spaine and other places.

The commodities of the Canaries.

In the Island of Ferro they haue none other water, but that which proceedeth in the night from a tree, compassed with a cloud, whence water issueth, seruing the whole island, both men and cattell, a thing notorious and knowne to very many.

A tree yeelding abundance of water in Ferro.

In the yeere 1428 it is written that Don Peter, the king

---

de Espanha duzentas legoas, & da costa de Africa dezasete. Em tẽpos passados adorauã os ydolos, comiã carne crua, por falta de fogo, nam tinham ferro, semeauã sem nada, laurauã a terra com cornos de bodes, & cabras, cada ilha falaua sua lingoagem, casauãse cõ muitas molheres, & primeiro que as conhecessem as dauam aos senhores: tinham outros diuersos custumes, agora todos sam da ley de Christo, tem muito trigo, ceuada, açucares, vinho, & hũs passaros q' chamã canarios, que em Espanha sam estimados. Na ilha do Ferro nam ha outra agoa senam a que de noite deita hũa aruore, sobre q' está hũa nuuẽ, desta bebem as gentes, & gados, cousa a todos muy notorio.

No anno de 1428 diz q' foy o Infante dom Pedro a Inglaterra,

---

[1] 17. [2] Dele.

of Portugals eldest sonne, was a great traueller. He went into England, France, Almaine, and from thence into the Holy Land, and to other places; and came home by Italie, taking Rome and Venice in his way: from whence he brought a map of the world, which had all the parts of the world and earth described. The Streight of Magelan was called in it The Dragons taile: The Cape of Bona Speraça, The forefront of Afrike, (and so foorth of other places:)[1] by which map Don Henry the kings third sonne was much helped and furthered in his discoueries.

A most rare and excellent map of the world.

A great helpe to Don Henry in his discoueries.

It was tolde me by Francis de Sosa Tauares, that in the yeere 1528, Don Fernando, the kings sonne and heire, did shew him a map, which was found in the studie[2] of Alcobaza, which had beene made 120 yeeres before, which map did set foorth all the nauigation of the East Indies, with the Cape of Bona Speraça, according as our later maps haue described it. Whereby it appeereth, that in ancient time there was as much or more discouered, then now there is. Notwithstanding all the trauaile, paines, and expences in this action of Don Henry, yet he was neuer wearie of his

As much discouered in ancient times as now is.

Barros, decad. 1, lib. 1, cap. 4.

França, Alemanha, a casa sancta, & a outras de aquella bãda, tornou por Italia, esteue em Roma, & Veneza, trouxe de lá hũ Mapamundo q' tinha todo ambito da terra, & o estreito do Magalhães se chamaua, Cola do dragam, o cabo de Boa esperança, frunteira de Africa, & q' deste padram se ajudara ho Infante dom Anrrique em seu descobrimento. Francisco de sousa tauarez me disse q' no anno de 1528 ho Infante dom Fernando lhe amostrara hũa Mapa que se achara no cartorio Dalcobaça que auia mais de cento & vinte annos que erá feito, o qual tinha toda nauegaçam da India, com ho cabo de Boa esperança, como as dagora, se assi he isto, ja em tempo passado era tanto como agoro, ou mais descuberto.

Com todo do trabalho & gasto que ho Ifante dom Aurique tinha

---

[1] Dele. [2] Collection.

Cape Bojador first passed, anno 1132.

purposed discoueries. At length there was a seruant of his called Gilianes[1] that first passed the Cape Bojador, a place before terrible to all men: and he brought word that it was not so dangerous as it was reported: for on the other side of it he went on land, and in maner of taking possession, set in the ground a crosse of wood, to be as a marke and token afterwards of his discouery so farre.

The death of Don John the first of Portugall.

In the yeere 1433, in the moneth of August, Don John died, and his sonne, Don Duarte or Edward, succeeded him in the kingdome.

Barros, decad. 1, lib. 1, cap. 5.

In the yeere 1434 Don Henry sent out one Alfonso Gonsales Baldaia [a sea captain] and Gilianes aforesaid, and they went to another cape, which was beyond the former, and going on land perceiued the countrey to be inhabited: and because they were desirous to satisfie Don Henry with as much relation and knowledge as they could get, they continued their voyage, and went forward, till they came to a certaine point of land, from whence they turned backe againe.

In the yeere 1438 king Edward, whom the Portugals

---

feyto, nunca desistio de seu preposito & descobrimento, & pera isso mandou a elle Gilianes seu criado, q' foy ho primeiro que passou ho cabo Bojador, tanto por todos arreceado, & trouxe noua nam ser tã perigoso como se dezia, da outra bãda sayo em terra, & como quem tomaua posse, pos hũa Cruz de pao nella por marco: & no anno de 1433 no mes de Agosto faleceo el Rey dom Joam, & aleuantaram por Rey dom Duarte seu filho.

¶ No anno de 1434 mãdou ho Ifante dõ Anrrique Afonso gonçaluez baldaya, capitam de hũ nauio, & Gilianes que descobrio o cabo em outro cabo alem delle, saydos em terra conhecerã ser pouoada, & como sabiam q' ho Infante desejaua auer della lingua forã ter a hũa põta sem ver neuhũa cousa, donde se tornaram, &

---

[1] And to pursue them he sent forth a servant, etc.

call Don Duarte, died, and Don Alphonso the prince being yoong, Don Peter his vncle gouerned the kingdome. The death of Don Duarte king of Portugall.

In the yeere 1441 Don Henry sent out two ships, and the captaines were, in the one Tristan, and Antonie Gonsales in the other. Being put to sea they tooke a prise vpon the coast, and sailed on to Cape Blanco, that is the White Cape, standing in 20 degrees, and informed Don Henry of the state of that coũtrey by the Moores which they brought from thence. Whereupon he sent one Fernan Lopez de Sanado to give knowledge thereof to Pope Martine, trusting to make these things commodious to Holy Church. Vpon which knowledge the Pope[1] granted indulgences and euerlasting pardon, and all other things demanded of him, vnto those which should die in this enterprise. Barros, decad. 1, lib. 1, cap. 6. Cape Blanco. Indulgences granted to encourage to this enterprise.

After this, in the yeere 1443, Don Henry commanded Antonie Gonsales to carrie backe the slaves which he had brought and to ransome them in their country, (which he did),[2] and the Moores gaue them in trucke for them againe blacke Moores with curled haire, and some gold; so that Barros, decad. 1, lib. 1, cap. 7.

---

no anno de 1438 faleceo el Rey dom Duarte: & pelo Principe dõ Afonso ficar menino gouernou ho Infante dom Podro suo tio.

¶ No anno de 1441 mandou ho Infante dom Anrriq' dous nauios, capitães delles Nuno tristam & Antam gonçaluez, sairam na costa, & fizeram presa, & chegaram ao cabo Branco, que está em vinte graos, enformado ho Infante das cousas daquella terra pelos mouros q' estes trouxeram, mandou Fernã lopez dazeuedo dar cõta ao Papa Martinho do que passaua, & como esperaua resultar gram proueito aa sancta madre igreja, ho Papa lhe concedeo indulgẽcia & doaçam perpetua, & tudo o mais que pedia aos que nesta empresa falecessem.

¶ Despois disto no anno de 1443 mandou ho Infante Antam gõçaluez resgatar os escrauos q' trouxera, & os mouros derã por elles negros de cabelos reuolto, & algum ouro: donde ficou nome

[1] And as the Pope hoped that great advantage would result to Holy Church, etc., etc.

[2] Dele.

Rio de Oro, why so called.

now that place is called Rio de Oro, that is, the Golden Riuer, whereby the desire of the discouerie might be[1] the more increased.

The Islands of Arguin.

Not long after he sent out another, named Nunnez Tristan, who came vnto the Islands of Arguin, where he tooke more slaves, and brought them to Portugall, in the yeere [following] 1444.

Hereupon, also, one Lansarote, a groome of Don Gilians chamber,[2] with others associated with him, armed out certaine ships, which went coasting til they came to the Islands of Garze, where they tooke [nearly] two hundred slaves, which were the first that were brought from thence to Portugall.

The Islands of Garze.

Barros, decad. 1, lib. 1, cap. 9.

In the yeere 1445, there went, as captain of a bark, one Gonsala de Syntra, an esquire belonging to Don Henry, into those parts; and he went on land, where he was taken with sixe or seuen more of his company, which place was therefore called after his name, Angra de Gonsaluo de Syntra. This was the first losse, which the Portugals receiued in their discoueries.

Angra de Gonsaluo de Syntra.

In the yeere following, Don Henry sent out three carauels, wherein went as captaines, Antonie Gonsales, Diego

---

rio douro, & mais acrecentou ho desejo ao descobrimento: & por isso foy logo lá Nuno tristam, & chegou às ilhas Darguim, donde fez presa, & se tornou cõ ella no anno seguinte de 1444. Lançarote moço da camara do Infante, Gilianes, & outros armaram certos nauios, foram por costa até as ilhas da Garça, tomarão perto de dozentas almas, que forã as primeiras que até entam de laa vieram.

¶ No anno de 1445 foy por capitam de hum nauio Gonçalo de Sintra escudeiro do Infante, saidos em terra nũa Angra que se agora chama de seu nome, tomaram os mouros com seys ou sete cõpanheiros, foy esta a primeira perda que recebeo Portugal desta ẽpresa & no anno seguinte mandou ho Infante tres carauellas, &

[1] Was.

[2] Groom of the chamber to the Infant, Don Gilians, etc.

Aloizio, and Gomez Perez, who had their direction not to enter into Rio de Oro, nor to beare themselves disorderly, but to trauaile in peace, and to conuert as many infidels as they could to Christianitie. But none of these things were performed by them; for they returned without doing any memorable act.

In the same yeere, 1446, another esquire belonging to the king of Portugall, called Denis Fernandes, of the citie of Lisbon, entered into these discoueries, more to win fame, than to reape commoditie by them. And he being in his voiage, came to the riuer of Sanaga, standing between 15 and 16 degrees of latitude towards the north, [and bordering upon the moors of Jalophos], where he tooke certaine Negroes; and not contented therewith, he went forward and discouered Cape Verde, standing in 14 degrees on the same side; and there he set vp vpon the land a crosse of wood, and then returned with great contentation. Barros, decad. 1, lib. 1, cap. 9, & cap. 13. The riuer of Sanaga. Cape Verde.

In the yeere 1447, one Nunnez Tristan, went foorth to discouer in a carauell, and he passed the aforesaid Cape Verde, and Rio Grande, and went past it vnto another Barros, decad. 1, lib. 1, cap. 14. Rio Grande.

---

capitães dellas Antã gõçaluez, Diego Afonso, Gomez pirez, a que deu regimento que nam entrasse no rio do Ouro: & asseitassem pazes, & fizessem quantos Christãos podessem: & sem nada d'isto se tornaram.

¶ No anno de 1446 hũ escudeiro del Rey dõ Afonso q' se chamaua Dinis fernandez da cidade de Lixboa, foy a este descobrimento, mais por honra q' por proueito: chegou ao rio á Sanaga, que está em quinze ou dezaseis graos d'altura da parte do norte, & estrema os mouros do Ialophos, onde tomou algũs negros: nã cõtente disto diz q' passou auante, & descobrio o Cabo verde, q' está em catorze da mesma parte, & posta sua Cruz de pao nelle tornou cõtente.

No anno de 1447 tornou Nuno tristã em hũa carauella & passou o Cabo verde, & rio Grãde: & sahio em outro q' està alèm delle em vinte graos, onde o mataram com dezoito Portugueses, & com

standing beyond it in twelve degrees,[1] where he was also taken with eighteen Portugals more; but the ship came home againe in safetie, conducted by fower or fiue (which escaped the hands of the Negroes.)[2]

In this yeere also, 1447, it happened that there came a Portugall ship through the streight of Gibraltar; and being taken with a great tempest, was forced to runne westwards more then willingly the men would, and at last they fell vpon an Island which had seuen cities, and the people spake the Portugall toong, and they demanded if the Moores did yet trouble Spaine, whence they had fled for the losse which they received by the death of the king of Spaine, Don Roderigo.

The island of seven cities.

The boateswaine of the ship brought home a little of the sand, and sold it vnto a goldsmith of Lisbon, out of the which he had a good quantitie of gold.

Don Pedro vnderstanding this, being then gouernour of the realme, caused all the things thus brought home, and made knowne, to be recorded in the house of justice.[3]

There be some that thinke, that those Islands whereunto the Portugals were thus driuen, were the Antiles, or Newe Spaine, alleaging good reasons for their opinion, which here

---

quatro ou cinco se tornou ho nauio em saluamento. Contam mais que neste meyo tempo vindo hũa nao de Portugueses pelo estreito de Gibraltar fora, lhe dera tal tromẽta, q' correra a loeste muito mais do q' quisera, & forã ter a hũa ilha em q' auia sete cidades & falauã a nossa lingoa & preguntarã se tinham os mouros ainda occupada Espanha dõde fogirã pola perda del rey dõ Rodrigo. O contra mestre da nao diz q' trouxe hũa pouca d'area & q' a vendera a hũ ouriues em Lixboa de q' tirara boa cãtidade douro: sabẽdo isto ho Infante dõ Pedro que ainda gouernaua, diz q' ho mãdou escreuer na casa do tõbo. E algũs querem q' estas terras & ilhas q' os Portugueses tocarã, sejam aquelas que se agora chamã as Antilhas & noua Espanha, & alegam muitas razões

[1] 20 ?

[2] Dele.

[3] Record.

I omit, because they serue not to my purpose. But all their reasons seeme to agree, that they should be that countrey, which is called Noua Spagna.

In the yeere 1449, the king, Don Alfonso, gave licence vnto his vncle, Don Henry, to inhabit[1] the Islands of the Açores, which were long before discouered.

Don Alfonso king of Portugall come to age. Barros. decad. 1, lib. 2, cap. 1. The Açores first inhabited.

And in the yeere 1458, this king went into Africa, and there he tooke the towne called Alcaçer.

Alcaçer taken.

And in the yeere 1461, he commanded Signior[2] Mendez, a gentleman of his house, to build the castle of Arguin, whereof he gave vnto him the gouernment, as to[3] his lieutenant.

The castle of Arguin builded. Ibidem.

In the yeere 1462, there came into the realme of Portugall three Genowais of good parentage, the chiefe of whom was called Antonie de Noli, and of the other two, the one was his brother, the other was his nephew, and each of these had his seuerall ship, crauing libertie of Don Henry to discouer the Islands of Cape Verde, which was granted them. Others say that the places which they discouered, were those which Antiquitie called the Gorgades, Hespe-

Barros, decad. 1, lib. 2, cap. 1.

The isles of Cape Verde discouered by three Genowais.

---

pera isso, em que nam falo por nã tornar isto à minha conta, mas com tudo toda a cousa de que nam sabiam dar rezam era dizer, he a noua Espanha.

¶ No anno de 1449 el Rey dõ Alonso deu licença ao Infante dõ Anrriq' seu tio p'ra mandar pouoar as ilhas dos Açores q' auia dias q' erã descubertas: & no anno de 1458 passou este Rey a Africa, & tomou a villa Dalcacere, & no de 61 mandou Soeiro mendez fidalgo de sua casa fazer o castello Darguim aque deu alcaydaria.

No anno de 1462 vieram a este reyno de Portugal tres Ianoeses pessoas nobres, o primeiro delles era Antã de Noly & hũ seu jrmão & sobrinho, cada hũ em seu nauio, pedirã licẽça ao Infante p'ra descobrir as ilhas do Cabo verde & elle lhe aprouue: algũs querem dizer que fossem aquellas que os antigos chamaram Gorga-

---

[1] People. [1] Soeiro. [3] Dele.

rides, and Dorcades; but they named them Mayo, Sainct Jago, and Sainct Philip, because they discouered them on those Saints daies: but they are also called by some, the Islands of Antonio.

The death of Don Henry, 1463.

[In this same year or] in the yeere following (1463, this good noble man)[1] Don Henry died, leauing from Cape De

Sierra Leona.

Non discouered vnto the mountaine called Sierra Leona, standing on this side the line in eight degrees of latitude (where no man had beene before that time.)[2]

In the yeere 1469, the king [Don John] of Portugall did

Barros, decad. 1, lib. 2, cap. 2. The countrey of Guiney let out to farme.

let out for yeerely rent the trade of Guiney vnto one called Fernan Gomez, which countrey afterwards was called The Mine. He let it out for fiue yeeres, for two hundred thousand Reyes by the yeere (which is of our English money £138 17s. 9d. ob.)[3] and added vnto his lease this condition, that euery yeere he should discouer an hundred leagues.

Ibidem.

In the yeere following, which was 1470, this king went

Arzila taken. Tanger taken.

into Africa with his sonne, Prince John, where they tooke the towne of Arzila, and the people of the citie of Tanger

---

nas, Esperidas, Orcadas, mas elles lhes poseram nome a Maya, Sanctiago, Sam Felipe, polas verem em seu dia, outros lhe chamão as ilhas Dantao ou Dantonio. Neste mesmo āno, ou no outro seguinte faleceo este Infante dom Anrique, deixando descuberto do cabo do Não ate a Serra lioa que estaa desta nossa banda, em oyto graos daltura.

¶ No anno de 1469 arrendou el rey dom Ioão, o trato de Guine a Fernam Gomez, que se despois chamou da Mina, por cinco annos, a rezā de dozentos mil reis cada hum anno, & q' mandasse em cada hum delles descobrir cem legoas alem das descubertas. No anno seguinte de 1470 passou este Rey & o principe dom João seu filho em Africa, & tomarão a villa Darzilla & a cidade de Tangere se despejou com medo, tēdo muyto custado, paresce que per-

---

[1] Dele. [2] Dele. [3] Present value about £40 or £50.

fled out for fear, and that he tooke also. It seemeth that good fortune followeth a couragious attempt.[1]

In the yeere 1471, Fernan Gomes gave commandment that the coast should be discouered as it lay.[2] Which was vndertaken by John de Santeram, and John de-Scouar; and they went and found the Mine in 5 degrees of latitude. Ibidem. La Mina.

And the next yeere, which was 1472, one Fernando da Poo discouered the Island, now called after his name. Also about this time the Islands of Sainct Thomas and Del Principe were discouered, standing vnder the line, with the firme land also, wherein is the kingdome of Benin, reaching to the Cape de Santa Catarina, standing on the south side of the line in 3 degrees. The man that made this discouerie was a seruant of the king, and his name was Sequeira. Ibidem. The isle de Fernan de Poo. Sainct Thome. Rha del Principe. Benin. Cape de Santa Catarina.

Many suppose, that then also there were those places, countreys and Islands discouered, which before were neuer knowne to vs since the flood.

In the yeere 1480, the magnanimous and valiant king

---

mitio Deos isto por amostrar q' os ousados sam delle fauorescidos.

¶ No āno de 1471 mandou Fernam Gomez descobrir a costa como se obrigara, & foram a isso, João de Santarem & João Descouar, & em cinco graos daltura acharam a Mina. E no āno seguinte de 1472 descobrio Fernão do poo a ilha q' se chama como elle, & neste mesmo tempo foram descubertas as ilhas de Sam Thome & prīcipe que estam na linha, & na terra firme o reyno de Benij ate ho cabo de Caterina que estaa da parte do Sul em tres graos, & o q' fez este descobrimento era criado de S. A. chamauase Siqueira. Muitos querē dizer que neste tempo fossem terras & ilhas descubertas, de que ja nā ha memoria q' sera de Noe ate agora.

¶ No anno de 1480 faleceo este magnanimo & esforçado Rey

---

[1] It appears that God permitted this to show that He favours the brave.

[2] As he had bound himself.

Don John the Second. Barros, decad. 1, lib. 3, cap. 2. Castell de Mina built.

Don Alphonso died, and left many things woorthy of memorie behinde him; and his sonne Don John the second succeeded him. Who in the yeere 1481, gaue direction for the building of the castle De Mina to one Diego d'Azambuxa, who did so, and was made captaine of it.

Barros, decad. 1, lib. 3, cap. 3.

Rio de Congo.

In the yeere 1484, the foresaid king John sent out one Diego Caon, a knight of his court, to discouer; and he went to the river of Congo, standing on the south side, in 7 or 8 degrees of latitude; where he erected a pillar of stone, with the royall armes and letters of Portugall, wherein he wrote[1] the commandement that he had receiued from the king, with the time and day [in which were placed the wooden crosses] (of his being there).[2] From thence he went vnto (a riuer neere)[3] the Tropicke of Capricorne, setting still vp pillars of stone where he thought it conuenient, and so came backe againe vnto Congo, and to the king of that country: who thereupon sent an ambassadour and men of credite into Portugall.

Discouerie neere vnto the Tropick of Capricorne.

An ambassadour from the king of Congo.

In the next yeere or the second following, one John Alonso d'Aueiro came from the kingdome of Benin, and

---

dom Afonso deixando muytas cousas feytas dignas de memoria, & começou logo a Reynar dõ João seu filho, q' no anno de oytenta & hum mandou por Diogo Dazambuja fazer a fortaleza da Mina, & ficou por capitam della.

No anno de 1484 foy mãdado por este Rey dom João a este descobrimẽto Diogo Cão caualeiro de sua casa: chegado ao rio de Manicõgo, que estaa da parte do Sul, em sete ou oyto graos daltura, pos nelle Padram de pedra com armas & letras reaes q' denunciauam que o mãdaua, & o anno & era em q' se poseram as Cruzes de pao, daqui foram ter ao rio Pico de Pico[3] de Capricornio, pondo padrões, oude lhe pareceo ser necessario, tornando a Manicõgo viose cõ el rey delle, q' mandou embaixador & homẽs de credito a este reyno, & no anno sequinte ou no outro despois

---

[1] Were set forth. [2] Dele. [3] Ao Tropico?

brought home pepper with a taile: which was the first of that kinde seene in Portugall. Pepper of Benin.

[In the year 1486 the king Don John sent on this discovery Bartholomew Diaz, a gentleman of the court, with three sail: coasting along he placed pillars of stone, and discovered the Cape of Good Hope, and beyond as far as the river Infante,[1] and it may be said that he saw the land of India, but, like Moses and the promised land, did not enter in.]

In the yeere 1487 king John sent to discouer India ouer land. In which iourney went one Pedro de Couillan, a servant of the kings, and Alfonso de Payna, because they could speake the Arabian toong. They went out in the moneth of May of the same yeere, and they tooke shipping at Naples, and arriued in the isle of Rhodes, and lodged in the house that was prouided for the Portugall knights of Barros, decad. 1, lib. 3, cap. 5 Pedro de Couillan and Alfonso de Payna sent to discouer India.

---

delle chegou João alonso Daueiro do Reyno de Benij com pimenta de rabo, que foy a primeira que se vio nesta terra.

¶ No anno de 486 mandou el rey dō Joaō a este descobrimento Bertholameu diaz cavaleiro de sua casa cō tres vellas, yndo assi ao longo da terra poseram padrões de pedra, & descobrio o cabo de boa esperança & alem delle ate ho rio do Infante, q' se pode dizer q' via terra da India, mas nā entrou nella, como Mouses na terra de promissam.

No āno de 487 madou el Rey dom João descobrir a India por terra, foy a isso hū Pero de couilhā seu criado, & Afōso de Paiua por saberē a lingoa Arabia, partiram no mes de Mayo do mesmo āno, & na cidade de Napoles embarcarā. Chegaram à ilha de rodes, pousaram em casa dos comendadores Portugueses, passaram

[1] Probably a little beyond Cape Agathere: this seems but a meagre account of the remarkable voyage of Bartholomew Diaz, who pushed discovery a thousand miles further than his predecessors. The cape he reached was named by him Cabo Tormentoso; but on his return to Portugal the king, with what seems a presentiment that it lay on the road to the Indies, gave it the name Good Hope.

Alexandria. that order: from thence they went to Alexandria, and so
Cayro. Toro. to Cayro, and thence to the hauen of Toro,[1] in the companie of the carauans or carriers which were Moores. There they tooke shipping, and being on the Red Sea they arriued at
Aden. the citie of Aden, and there they separated themselues: for Alfonso de Payna went towards Æthiopia, and Pedro de
Cananor. Couillan into India. Who came vnto the cities of Cananor
Calicut. Goa. and Calicut, and came backe vnto Goa: where he tooke shipping vnto Sofala, being on the coast of Africa, in the southerne latitude of 20 degrees, to see the mines that were
Sofala. Mozambique. Quiloa. Monbaza. Melinde. of so great name. From Sofala he turned backe to Mosambique, and vnto the cities of Quiloa, Mombaza, and Melinde, till he came backe againe vnto the citie of Aden: where he and Alfonso de Payna diuided themselues: and thence he sailed againe through the Red Sea vnto the citie of Cayro, where he thought to haue met with his companions: but there he heard that he was dead[2] by the letters that he receiued from king John his master; in which letters he was farther commanded to trauaile into the countrey and dominions of Presbyter John.

Vpon this commandement he[3] prouided for his farther

à cidade Dalexandria, dahi foram ao Cayro, & ao porto do toro em Carauanas, & em Recouas de mouros, onde embarcarã no mar roxo, chegaram à cidade Dadem, onde se apartaram João de paiua pera Thiopia, & Pero de Couilhaã á India, & foy ter aa cidade de Cananor, Calecut, & tornou a Goa, onde embarcou pera Sofalla, costa Dafrica, a ver aquellas Minas cousas tam nomcadas.

¶ De Sofala tornou a Moçambique, & aa cidade de Quiloa, Bombaça, Melinde, ate a cidade Dadem donde Afonso de paiua se apartara delle, & foy pelo mar roxo à cidade do Cairo, õde ficaram de se ajuntarem, mas achou noua como ahy falecera, & cartas del Rey dom Joam em q' mandaua q' se visse cõ o preste Joã da India.

¶ Vendo Pero de couilham este recado, partio do Cairo ao porto

[1] Cosseir?
[2] And at the same time received letters from, etc.
[3] Set out from, etc.

The voiage of Pedro de Couillan vnto the countrey of Prete Ianni.

iourney, and from Cairo went backe againe to the hauen of Toro, and from thence to Adens, where he had been twise before: and there hearing of the fame of the citie of Ormuz, he determined to goe thither; and therefore went along the coast of Arabia vnto the Cape Razalgate, standing vnder the Tropicke of Cancer, and from thence he went to Ormuz, standing in twenty-seuen degrees on that side. There he learned and vnderstood of the streight of Persia, and of that countrey: and entred there into the Red Sea, and passed ouer to the realme of the Abassini, which commonly is called Presbyter Johns countrey or Æthiopia: and there he was detained till the yeere 1520, when there came thither the ambassadour Don Roderigo de Lima. This Pedro de Couillan was the first Portugall that euer knew and saw the Indias and those sea, and other places[1] adioyning thereunto.

Abassini. Pedro de Couillan the first Portugal that came into the East Indias and Æthiopia by the Red Sea.

In the yeere 1490 the king sent vnto Congo one Gonzalo de Sousa, a gentleman, with three ships, and in them sent home the ambassadour of Congo, which was sent into Portugall, whom Diego Caon had brought from thence: who at his being in Portugall was baptised, both himselfe and others of his companie.

Barros, decad. 1, lib. 3, cap. 9.

---

do Toro, & dahi á cidade Dadem onde ja duas vezes estiuera, & tendo noticia de camanha cousa era & quam prospera a cidade Dormuz, determinou d'ir a ella, & foy ao longo da costa Darabia ao cabo de Resalgate que estaa no Tropico de Cancro, & dahi a Ormuz, que estaa situada em vinte sete graos da mesma banda. Enformado do estreito da Persia, & daquella terra, se tornou ao mar roxo & passouse ao Reyno do Abexim, que vulgarmẽte se chama Preste João da india, onde esteue ate ho anno de 520 que ho achou lá o embaixador dõ Rodrigo de Lima. Este Pero de couilhaã foy o primeiro Portugues que eu sayba q' vio as Indias & seus mares, & outras cousas a nos muy remotas.

[1] Far removed from us.

The aforesaid Gonzalo de Sousa died in that iourney by the way, and in his roome they chose his nephew, Ruy de Sousa, for their capitaine; and so being come vnto Cogo, the king was very glad of their comming, and yeelded himselfe and the greater part of his realme to be baptized:[1] whereof the Portugals had good cause to reioice, seeing by them so many Infidels were conuerted from gentilitie and paganisme to Christianitie.

A great parte of the kingdome of Congo baptized.

¶ No anno de 1490 mandou el Rey a Manicongo com tres nauios Gonçalo de Sousa homẽ fidalgo, tornou em sua companhia o embayxador de Manicongo, que Diogo cam trouxera, tendo ja tomado agoa de baptismo & outros que com elle vieram, Gonçalo de Sousa faleceo no caminho & enlegeram por capitã mor a seu sobrinho Ruy de Sousa, chegado a Manicongo, fez lhe el Rey muyto gasalhado & baptizouse logo com a mòr parte de sua terra, que foy grande louuor, & honra ao reyno de Portugal & sua coroa.

[1] Which was cause of great praise and honour to the kingdom of Portugal and its crown.

[DISCOVERIES OF THE ANTILLES AND INDIES MADE BY THE SPANIARDS.]

THE FIRST BEGINNING OF THE DISCOUERIES OF THE SPANYARDS, WITH THE CONTINUATION OF THE DISCOUERIES OF THE PORTUGALS.

In the yeere 1492, in the time of Don Ferdinando, king of Castile, he being at the siege[1] of Granada, dispatched one Christopher Columbus, a Genoway,[2] with three ships to goe and discouer Noua Spagna: who first had[3] offered his seruice for a westerne discouerie vnto king John of Portugal; but he would not entertaine him.

He *being sufficiently furnished for this enterprise*,[4] departed from the towne of Palos the third day of August, hauing with him as captaines and pilots, Martin Alfonso Pinzon, Francis Martinez Pinzon, Vincent Yannes Pinzon,

---

DESCOBRIMENTOS DAS ANTILHAS & INDIAS POLLOS ESPANHŌES FEYTOS.

No anno de 1492 estando el Rey dom Fernando de Castella sobre a cidade de Grada, despachou Christouam Colom Italiano, cō tres Nauios ao descobrimento da noua Espanha o q'l primeiro viera a Portugal a el rey dom João & o nam quis aceitar. Partio da villa de Pallos aos tres dias do mes Dagosto leuando consigo por capitães & pilotos Martim Alonso pição, Francisco martīz pição, Vicēte

[1] Near the city.

[2] An Italian.

[3] Come to Portugal to the king Don John, who did not desire to accept him.

[4] Not in Portuguese.

The first that in sailing are thought to haue obserued latitudes.

and Bartholomew Columbus his brother, with 120 persons more in his companie: and some affirme that they were the first that sailed by latitudes. They tooke the Canaries in their way, and there refreshed themselues; taking their course thence [through the Sargassum Sea] *towards Cipango*:[1] but finding the sea by the way full of weeds they were amazed, and with great feare arriued at the Antiles the tenth day of October, and the first island that they descried was called Guanahany: where they went on land, and tooke possession of it, and named it San Saluador. *This island standeth in 25 of degrees northerly latitude.*[2] And after that they found many islands, which they called the Princes,[3] because they were the first that they had discouered.

The Isle of Guanahany first discouered.

The sauages of these parts call these islands by the name of Lucaios, hauing in deede seuerall[4] names for them. And they doe stand on the north side almost vnder the Tropicke of Cancer. As for the Island of S. James or Jamaica, it standeth betweene 16 and 17 degrees.

Lucaios Islands.

Thence they went to the islands which the naturals of the

---

anez pição, & Bartholameu Colõ seu hirmao, & cẽto & vinte pessoas. E querem dizer algũs q' fossem os primeiros q' nauegassem por alturas. Nas ilhas Canarias tomarã refresco, dahi foram na volta do Sagarço: & vendo o mar delle coalhado ficaram espantados, & com grande arreceo chegaram às Antilhas a dez dias do mes de Ouctubro. E a primeira ilha que viram se chamaua Greinani,[5] sayram em terra, tomaram posse della, poseram lhe nome sam Saluador: despois viram muytas a q' chamaram as princesas, per serẽ as primeiras por elles vistas: mas os da terra lhes chamã os Lucayos, ainda q' todas tẽ nomes separados, & estam da parte do Norte, quasi debaixo do Tropico de Cancro, de parte do Norte de dezeseys graos ate dezesete, que he a ilha de Santiago.

¶ Daqui foram á ilha a que os da terra chamã a Cuba, & os

[1] Not in Portuguese. [2] Not in the Portuguese.
[3] The Princesses. [4] Distinct. [5] Guanani?

countrey call Cuba, and the Spanyards call it Ferdinandina, bicause their kings name was Ferdinando, standing in 22 degrees: from whence the Indians conducted them vnto another island, which they call Hayti, and the Spanyards called it Isabella, in the memorie of the Queene of Castile, which was so called, and they named it also Hispaniola. In that island the admirall ship of Columbus was cast away: of the timber and planks whereof they made a forte,[1] wherein they left 38 men, and a captaine called Roderigo de Arana, to learne the language and customes of the countrey. They brought from thence musters and shewes of gold, pearles,[2] and other things which that countrey yielded; and ten Indians also, whereof six died,[3] the rest were brought home and baptized. Cuba. Hispaniola.

Hereupon there grewe such a common desire of trauaile[4] among the Spanyards, that they were ready to leape into the sea to swim, if it had been possible, into those new found parts. The aforesaid company of Columbus at their comming home tooke in their way the isles of the Açores, and the 4 day of March, in the yeere 1493, they entred into

---

Castelhanos poserã nome Fernandina por el rey dõ Fernando, a qual estaa em vĩte dous graos, donde os Indios os leuarã á outra que elles chamão Ahyti, & os Castelhanos Isabela, em memoria da Rainha de Castella: & tãbem a Espanhola. Aqui se perdeo a nao capitania, & da madeira della fizeram hũa tranqueira, onde deixarã trinta & oyto homẽs, & capitam delles Rodrigo darena, pera aprenderem a lingoa & costumes da terra, donde trouxeram mostras douro, papagayos, & outras cousas q' la auia, & dez Indios de que escaparam seys que se ca baptizaram. E pos isto tam grande aluoroço & desejo aos Espanhões q' a nado queriã hir aq'lla terra. E na volta vierã pellas ilhas dos Açores, & a quatro dias de Março do anno de 1493 entraram pella barra de Lisboa: de

[1] Or blockhouse.
[2] Parrots.
[3] Whereof six did not die, and were brought home and baptized.
[4] And this raised such transport and desire.

Contention betweene the kings of Spaine and Portugall.

the bar of Lisbon: which discouerie pleased not the king of Portugall. Whereupon rose a contention betweene those two kings.

Christopher Columbus being arriued went presently into Castile with the newes of all things, and acquainted the king Fernando with the discontentednes of the king of Portugal: whereupon he and the Queene Isabella his wife sent streight word thereof vnto Pope Alexander the 6., whereat he and the Italians were in great admiration, marvailing that there was any more land besides that which was vnder[1] the Romanes. But the end of this matter was this: Alexander the Pope gaue these countreies by his judgement vnto the kingdomes of Leon and Castile; with this condition, that they should labour to extirpate idolatrie, and plant the holy faith in those countreyes.

The bull of donation.

Fernando the king hauing receiued this answere, was glad of it, and sent Christopher Columbus againe on the former voiage, hauing made him admirall, and giuen him other honors, with particular armes,[2] and a posie written about his armes to this effect:

Gomara, historiæ general, lib. i, cap 17.

---

q' el rey dom Joam lhe pesou tanto q' teue differença sobre estas terras com ho de Castella.

¶ Tanto q' Christouã colõ chegou a Castella cõ esta noua, & de como el rey dõ Joã lhe pessaua della, el Rey dõ Fernãdo & dona Isabel, mãdarã logo ao Papa Alexandre sexto, da qual noua elle & todo o pouo ficaram marauilhados, auer terra q' os Romãos nam tiuerã noticia, auẽdose por señores da redondeza & fez logo doaçam dellas aos reynos de Lyam & Castella, cõ tal cõdiçam q' trabalhassẽ com q' a jdolatria desarreigasse, & a nossa sãcta fee multiplicasse. Chegada esta reposta tornou logo el rey dõ Fernãdo mãdar Christouam colõ ao descobrimẽto, ja Almirante cõ outras honras, merces & insignias, & derredor das suas armas hũa letra q' dezia, por Castella & Leõ nouo mũdo achou Colõ.

---

[1] Known to.

[2] Favours and decorations.

For Castile and for Leon
A new world found out Colon.

In the yeere 1493, the 25 of the moneth of October, Christopher Columbus went backe vnto the Antiles, and frō Cadiz he tooke his course, hauing in his companie 17 ships, and 1500 men in them, with his brethren Bartholomew Columbus and Diego Columbus, with other knights, gentlemen, men of law, and religious men, with chalices, crosses, rich ornaments, and with great power[1] *and dignitie*[2] from Pope Alexander; & the 10 day after their setting foorth, they arriued at the Canaries; & from thence, in 25 or 30 daies, they sailed vnto the Antiles; & the first island that they saw standeth in 14 degrees towards the north, due west from Cape Verde, on the coast of Africa. They say that the distance from thence to the Canaries is 800 leagues. The name they gaue it was Deseada, that is, the desired or wished Island, for the great desire which the company had to come to sight of land. After that they discouered many more, which they named the Virgines, which the naturals of the country call the Caribas, for that the men of that countrey are good warriers, and shoote well in bowes.

Columbus second voyage.

Deseada discouered.

Caribas.

No anno de 1493 aos 25 do mes Doctubro, tornou Christouã colō ás Antilhas, & da barra de Calez tornou sua derrota, leuãdo dezasette vellas, & mil & quinhentos homēs nellas, & seus hirmãos, Bertholameu colom, & Diogo colom, & outros fidalgos, caualeiros, & letrados, & religiosos com calezes, Cruzes, & ricos ornamentos, & grandes poderes do Papa Alexandre. E aos dez dias chegaram aas Canarias: & dellas a vinte cinco ou trinte dias ás Antilhas. A primeira ilha que viram estaa em quatorze graos da parte do Norte leste hoeste com ho cabo Verde, diz que auera della ás Canarias oito centas legoas, poseran lhe nome a Desejada, pelos desejos que leuauã de ver terra, logo viram outras muitas, a que poseram nome as Virgens: ainda que os da terra lhe chamã as

[1] Powers. [2] Not in Portuguese.

They poison their arrowes with an herbe, whereof he that is hurt dieth, biting himselfe like as a mad dog doth.

From these islands and others they went vnto the principall island there, which they of the countrey doe call Boriquen, and the Spanyards call it S. John, and thence to Hispaniola or Isabella, where they found all the men dead which they had left [from injuries (or diseases) incident to the countrey]. Here the admirall left the most part of the people to plant it,[1] and appointed his brethren to be gouernours there: and so tooke two ships, and went to discouer the other side of the Island of Cuba, and from thence to Jamaica [which is now called Santiago]. All these islands stand from 16 vnto 20 degrees of northerly latitude. In the meane time that the admirall sailed about, his brethren and they that were left with them were much troubled, because the sauages did rise against them. So that Christopher Colon went backe againe into Spaine, to tell the king and queene of his aduentures.

Boriquen, or S. John de porto rico.

Jamaica.

Quiribas, por ser de hómes guerreiros & bõs frecheiros, tiram com erua tã peçonhenta que quem morre della morde a si mesmo como cão danado.

¶ Destas ilhas em outras foram ter à principal dellas, a que os da terra chamã Boriquem, & os Castelhanos sa João, dõde chegarã a Espanhola ou ilha Bela[2] & acharão todos os homẽs mortos que nella deixaram, por offensas que aos da terra fizeram aqui, deixou ho Almirante a mayor parte da gẽte pera pouoala, & seus jrmãos gouernadores della, & embarcando em dous nauios foy descobrir a costada da ilha da Cuba, & dahi a Jamaica, q' se agora chama Santiago, todas estas ilhas estam de dezasete ate vinte graos daltura da parte do norte. E em quanto laa andou ho Almirante, seus jrmãos com os q' aly ficaram passaram assaz trabalho & desauẽtura por se aleuantar a terra, tornou Christouã colõ outra vez a Castella a da conta a el Rey & à Rainha do que là passara.

---

[1] Or people it. [2] Isabella?

In the yeere 1494, and in the moneth of Januarie, there was an agreement made of the differences which were betweene the two kings of Spaine and Portugall. For the which agreement there were sent out of Portugall Ruy de Sosa, and Don John his sonne, and the Doctor Ayres de Almada: and for the king of Spaine there were Don Henry Henriques, Don John de Cardenas, and the Doctor Maldonado. All these met in the towne of Tordesillas, and they deuided the world frō the north to the south by a meridian which standeth west from the Islands of Cape Verde 300[1] leagues: so that the one halfe which lay vnto the east should belong vnto Portugall, and that which lay to the west to the king of Spaine, whereby notwithstanding libertie to trauell [by sea and land] was left equall vnto both.

The first line of partition.

In the yeere following, 1495, John king of Portugall died, and Emmanuel his cosen began to reigne.

The death of Don John the second.

In the yeere 1496 there was a Venetian in England called John Cabota, who hauing knowledge of such a new discouerie as this was, and perceiuing by the globe that the

The great discouerie of John Cabota and the English.

No anno de 1494 & mes de Janeiro se aueriguaraō as differenças que antre estes dous Reys auia: & foy a isso Ruy de sousa & dō João seu filho, & o doctor Ayres Dalmada: & da parte de Castela dom Anrique Anriquez, dom Jorge de Cardines, & o doctor Maldonado, ajuntaramse todos em Torresilhas, & partiram ha redondeza de Norte Sul por hum meridiano q' está ao ponente das jlhas do Cabo verde 370 legoas, & que ametade que ficasse ao Leuante fosse de Portugal, & Ocidente de Castella, & o mar & terra pera caminhar fosse a todos iqual. No anno seguinte de nouenta & cinco faleceo el Rey dom João, & começou a reynar dō Manoel seu primo.

No anno de 1496 achandose hum Venezeano por nome Sebastião Gaboto em Inglaterra, & ouuindo noua de tam nouo descobri-

[1] 370 ?

islands before spoken of stood almost in the same latitude with his countrey, and much neerer to England than to Portugall, or to Castile, he acquainted king Henrie the seuenth, then king of England, with the same, wherewith the saide king was greatly pleased, and furnished him out with two ships and three hundred men: which departed and set saile in the spring of the yeere, and they sailed westward til they came in sight of land in 45 degrees of latitude towards the north, and then went straight northwards till they came into 60 degrees of latitude, where the day is 18 howers long, and the night is very cleere and bright. There they found the aire cold, and great islands of ice, but no ground in [seventy, eighty] an hundred fathomes sounding [but found much ice, which alarmed them]: and so from thence [putting about] finding the land to turne eastwards they trended along by it [on the other tack] discouering all the bay and riuer named Deseado,[1] to see if it passed on the other side: then they sailed backe againe [diminishing the latitude] till they came

---

mento como este era: & vendo em hũa poma como estas jlhas acima ditas estão quasi em hũ paralelo & altura, & muyto mais perto de sua terra hũa a outra, que de Portugal nẽ Castella, o amostrou a el Rey dõ Anrrique o septimo de que elle ficou tam satisfeito, que mandou logo armar dous nauios, partio na primavera cõ trezẽtos companheiros, fez seu caminho a Loeste a vista da terra, & quarẽta & cinco graos daltura da parte do norte, forão por ella ate sessenta onde os dias sam de dezoyto horas, & as noytes muy claras & serenas. Auia aqui muyta frialdade & ylhas de neue que não achauam fundo em setenta, oitenta, cem braças, mas achauã grandes regelos, do que tambem se arreceauã. E como daqui por dianta tornasse a costa ao leuante, fizerãose na outra volta ao lõgo della descobrindo toda a baya, rio, enseada, p'ra ver se passaua da outra banda, & foram assi diminuindo naltura ate trinta

[1] Or inlet.

to 38 degrees toward the equinoctiall line, and from thence returned into England. There be others which say that he went as far as the Cape of Florida, which standeth in 25 degrees. This is to the south of the Chesepian Bay.

In the yeere 1497 the king of Spaine, Don Fernando, sent out Christopher Columbus with sixe ships, and he himselfe prouided two ships at his owne cost, and sending his brother before, he made saile from the Bay of Cadiz, carrying with him his sonne, Don Diego Colon. It was then reported that he went to take the Island of Madera, because he mistrusted the French men, and therefore sent thither three ships: others say it was to the Canaries. But howsoeuer it was, this is true, that he and three more went vnto the Islands of Cape Verde, and ran along by the line, finding great calmes and raine, and the first land which they came vnto of the Antiles was an island standing in 9 degrees of latitude towards the north, ioining fast vnto the maine land, which they called La Trinidada; and so he entred into the Gulfe of Paria, and came out of the mouth which they named Bocca de Dragone, or the Dragons mouth: and Columbus third voiage Gomara, historiæ generall, lib. I, cap. 21. Trinidada.

& oyto graos, donde se tornaram a Inglaterra. Outros querem dizer que chegasse á ponta da Florida que estaa em vinte cinco graos.

No anno de 1497 tornou el rey dõ Fernando a mandar ás Antilhas Christouão Colõ com seys nauios, elle armou dous aa sua custa, mandou seu yrmão diante: partio elle da baya de Calez, leuando consigo dõ Diogo Colon seu filho. Diz que foy tomar a ylha da Madeira, cõ receyo de Franceses, dõde mãdou tres nauios, outros querem dizer das Canarias, como quer que seja, elle & tres foy aa ylha do cabo Verde, & correo ao longo da linha, em que achou grã calmaria & chuueiros. Ea primeira terra que viram das Antilhas, foy hũa ylha que estaa em noue graos daltura da parte do norte, pegada com a terra firme, poserãlhe nome a Trindade: entraram ne golfam de Parea, & sayrã por huã boca, a q' chamam do Dragõ, tomaram na mão a costa, & acharam tres pontas, a que

they tooke their course hard by the coast, where they found
Testigos. three[1] small islands, which they named Los Testigos, that is to say, the Witnesses, beyond which standeth the Island of
Cubagua. Cubagua, where is great fishing of muscle pearles: where also, as they say, there springeth a well of oile: and beyond
Frailes, Roques, Aruba, Curaçao, &c. that island they came to the Isles of Frailes, Roques, Aruba, and Curaçoa, with other small ones all along the bay:[2] and
Cabo de Vela. they came to the point of Cabo de Vela, and discouered along the coast almost 200 leagues,[3] from whence they crossed ouer to Hispaniola, hauing had also sight of the
Beata. island called Beata.

[There are in these parts certain insects or birds, called Cocoyos; they are furnished with four stars; two in the eyes, and the others under the wings, which shine like candles. They write, spin, sew, and weave with them, and carry them to give light, and when these stars are stuck on their hands and faces they seem to be on fire.

There is another insect called Nigu; it skips like a flea,

---

poseram nome Testigos, & diante a ylha Cubaga, que he gram pescaria D'aljofre. Tambem dizem q' tem fonte d'azeyte, & mais adiante viram as ylhas de Paragry, Roques, & Heruma: & o Coraceo, & outras pequenas ao longo da praya. Chegaram aa ponta que se chama da Vela, descobriram por costa cento & cincoenta ou dozentas legoas, onde atrauessaram a ylha Espanhola & ouueram vista da que se chama Beata.

Ha nestas ylhas & terras hũs bichos ou passaros a que chamam Cocoyos, tem quatro estrelas, duas nos olhos, & as outras debaixo das asas, dam claridade como candeas: podem escreuer, fiar, cozer, & tecer com ellas, & as leuam pera alumiarem, & se untam as mãos & rostros com estas estrelas, parece que ardem em fogo.

Ha outro Bicho que chamam Nigu, salta como pulga, he muyto

---

[1] Peaks.
[2] Shore.
[3] One hundred and fifty or two hundred leagues.

but is smaller: it fixes itself in the flesh under the nail, and there produces so many grubs, that if not presently removed they multiply in such a way that people lose their fingers, and some become maimed for life.

There is also in these parts another vermin as large as a cat, it lives among trees, hanging from the branches by the tail, and after its young ones are born they take to a pouch, with which nature has furnished them; in this entresol of the belly there is a teat which suckles them, whence it appears that it goes big with its young until of such age that nature delivers them, and then the young ones go to seek their own living.

There are in these islands many different fishes, and one which no one knows whether it be beast or fish: it has hands and feet like a lizard, snout and tail like a greyhound, feeds in the water, and on land among the trees, lays eggs like a fowl, from which they are produced: these have a soft shell, and if fried with oil or butter they do not thicken; with water I do not know. When these creatures are small they pass on the surface of the water so rapidly that

---

mais pequeno, mete se entre a unha & carne, & poem aly emprouiso tanta lendea, que se lhe nam acodē logo multiplicam: de maneira que perdem os dedos & ficam aleijados algūs a vida. Ha tambem nestas partes outro bicho de tamanho de hum gato, anda pellas aruores, dependura se dos ramos pello rabo, & depois que pare, hos filhos tornam se a meter por hum buraco que tem junto da natura: neste antresolho da barriga tem hūa mama cō que ho cria, por onde parece que anda prenhe ate ser de ydade que ha natureza o despede, & vay buscar sua vida.

¶ Ha nestas jlhas muitos & diuersos pescados, & hum que se não entende se he alimaria se pexe, tem pes & mãos como lagarto, focinho & rabo como galgo, cria se nagoa & na terra pelas aruores, poē ouos como de galinhas, de que se geram, tem a casca delgada, se os frigem nam se coalham com azeite nem manteiga, senão com agoa; em quanto estes bichos sam pequenos, passam per cima

they do not sink; it further appears that at a certain season they run upon land, then turning about they go under the water along the sand, for they know not how to swim, nor have they that fashion. They are eaten during carnival and Lent.

There is also a fish called Monatim: it is large and indurated; it has the head and countenance of a cow, and also resembles it much in its meat; it has arms joined to its shoulders with which it swims; its principal food is the grass that grows along the edge of the water; it is very savoury; it has some stones in its head which are profitable for the grief of stone, and the female has teats on her breast, with which she suckles her young, which are born living.

There is another fish called Reverso, a little greater than a span; it has spikes like a hedgehog. They feed them in the sea in a basket tied to a long line, and take by their means monatis and other large fish, and use them as ferrets for rabbits. Here are many sardines; these small fish are seen in Maluco and among those islands,

---

d'agoa com tãta presteza, que se nam vão ao fundo, mas parece que corrẽ por terra ate certo tempo, dahi por diante andam por baxo dagoa ao longo d'area por nam saberẽ nadar, nem tem pera isso maneira, comem nos no carnal & quaresma.

Ha la hum pexe que se chama Monatim, he grande & de coiro, tem a cabeça & rostro de vaca, & tãbẽ na carne parece muito a ella, tẽ hũs braços junto dos hombros com que nadã, o mais de seu comer heeru a q' nace ao longo d'agoa, he muy saboroso, tem hũ as pedras na cabeça q' sam proueitosas pera a dor de pedra, & a femea tem tetas nos peitos com q' criam os filhos que nacem viuos. Ha outro pescado a q' chamã Reuerso pouco mayor de hum palmo, tẽ espinhos como ouriço cacheiro, crião nos no mar em hũ couão, atam nos em hũ cordel comprido, tomã com elles monatīs, & outros grandes pescados & trazenos como forais aos cohelhos. Aqui ha muitas sardinhas, estes bichos pescados se vem em Maluco, &

and the inhabitants resemble those of New Spain, and also some eat human flesh.]

In this same yeere 1497, on the 20 day of the moneth of June, one Vasques de Gama sailed from Lisbon by the king Emmanuels commandement to India with three ships, wherein there went for captaines, Vasquez de Gama, Paulus de Gama his brother, and Nicolas Coello, with 120 men; with whom also there went one ship laden only with vittailes, and in 14[1] daies they came vnto Cape Verde, vnto the Island of Saint Jago, where they refreshed themselues, and from thence they went along the coast beyond the Cape of Bona Sperança, whereupon they erected certaine pillers of stone, and so came vnto Mosambique, standing in 15[2] degrees to the south of the line, where they staied not long, but went from thence to Mozamba, and vnto Melinde: where the king of that place gaue them pilots, which conducted them into India, in which discouerie they found out Los Baxos do Padua, that is to say, the flats of Padua.

Barros, decad. 1, lib. 4, cap. 2, and to the end of the 11 chapter.

The Cape of Bona Sperança.

Mosambique.

Mombaza.

Melinde.

Los Baxos de Padua.

In the yeere 1498, in the moneth of May, they came to

---

naq'llas ylhas, & a gente se parece cõ a da noua Espanha, & assi comem algũs a carne humana.

No mesmo anno de 1497 a vinte dias do mes de Julho, partio Vasco da Gama por mandado del Rey dom Manoel, de Lisboa pera aa India com tres vellas, hiam por capitães Vasco da Gama, & Paulo da Gama seu hirmão, & Nicolao Coelho, & cẽto & vinte homẽs nellas, hia mais hum nauio cõ mantimento, & em treze dias foram ao Cabo verde á ilha de Santiago a tomar refresco, & dahi foram ao longo da terra: & alem do cabo de Boa esperança poserã padrões nella. Chegados a Moçambique, que está em treze graos da parte de meyo dia, fizeram ahi pouca detença: foram a Mombaça & a Melinde, el Rey delle lhe deu pilotos, que os poseram na India, na qual trauessa descobrirão os baixos de Padua.

No anno de 1498 no mes de Mayo, surgirã na cidade de Calecu

[1] 13?

[2] 13?

Calicut. an anker before the citie of Calicut and Panana, where they remained all the winter: and the first day of September they set saile towards the north, discouering the coast all along till they came to the Island of Angediua, which standeth on that side in 15 degrees of latitude, where they came to an anker in the beginning of October, and so they departed from Angediua in Februarie in the yeere 1499, and came in sight of the coast of Africa about Melinde, towards the north 3 or 4 degrees, and from thence they sailed vnto the said citie, and so vnto Mozambique againe, and to the Cape of Bona Sperança, sailing along by the coast, and then they came to the Islands of Cape Verde, and last of al to the citie of Lisbon in the moneth of September, hauing beene in the voiage 26 monethes.

Gomara, historiæ general, lib.

In the yeere 1499, on the 13 day of the moneth of Nouember, there departed frō Palos one Vincent Yannez Pinson and his nephew Aries Pinson with fower ships well appointed at their owne cost and charges, to discouer the new world vnder the licence of the king of Castile, and with commandement not to touch there, where the admirall Columbus had beene. And so they went to the Islands of

---

& Panane, & estiuerā todo ho inuerno, & o primeiro de Setembro se fizeram a vella, & foram contra ho Norte descobrindo aquela costa atee a ylha D'angediua que estâ daquella parte em quinze graos d'altura, onde surgiram na entrada do mes Doctubro, partiram de Angediua, & no de Feuereiro do anno de 1499 ouueram vista da terra de Africa, acima de Melinde cōtra ho norte tres ou quatro graos: d'ahi foram àquella cidade, & della a Moçambique, & ao cabo de boa Esperança, & tomaram na mão a costa, & vieram as ylhas do Cabo verde, & a cidade de Lisboa na entrada do mes de Setembro, & poseram vinte & seis meses neste caminho.

No anno de 1499 a treze dias do mes de Nouembro, partiram de Pallos, Vicente Anez piçā & seu sobrinho Aires piçam cō quatro nauios que armaram á sua custa, pera descobrimēto do nouo mūdo, cō licença del rey de Castella, & regimēto q' nam tocasse no q' o

Cape Verde, and passed the line to the southward, and discouered the Cape of Saint Augustine standing on that side in 8 degrees of latitude, and there they wrote on the rindes of pine trees the names of the king and of the queene [with some of their own], also the yeere and day when they arriued there. They fought with the people of Brasil, but got nothing; they tooke their course all along the coast towards the west vnto the riuer Maria Tambal, and at that time they had taken thirtie and odde prisoners.[1] The chiefe places where they touched were the Cape of S. Augustine, and the angle or point of S. Luke, and Tierra de los Humos, the riuers of Marannon and of the Amazons, and Rio dolce, or the Sweete riuer, and other places along the coast: and they came to [Para in] ten degrees of latitude on the north side, where they lost two ships and their companie, and remained in that voiage of discouery ten moneths and 15 daies.

The Cape of S. Augustine.

Rio de Maria Tambal.

Angla de San Lucas. The riuers of Marannon, Amazons, and Rio Dolce.

In the yeere 1500 and in the moneth of March, one Pedro Aluarez Cabral sailed out of Lisbon with 13 ships, with com-

Barros, decad. 1, lib. 5, cap. 2.

---

almirante Colõ tinha descuberto, pelo q' foram as ilhas do Cabo verde & passarã a linha da outra parte do sul, & descrobrirã o cabo de sancto Agostinhõ q' estaa daquella banda en oyto graos daltura, & escreueram em troncos de aruores & penedos ho nome del Rey & Raynha com algũs delles, & ho anno & dia q' ali chegaram, pelejaram cõ hos Brasis, & nam guardaram nada. Tomaram na mão ha costa contra ho Ponente, & no Rio Maria, Tambal, captiuaram neste tempo trinta & tantos Indios, tomaram ho cabo primeiro, Angra de sam Lucas a terra dos Fumos, o rio Maranhõ & o das Mazonas, & rio Doçe & outras partes ao longo da costa, chegarã aa Paria em dez graos daltura da parte do norte, perderão dous nauios & gente. Poserã na viagem & descobrimento dez meses & meyo.

No anno de 1500 & entrada de Março, partio Pedraluarez Cabral

---

[1] Indians.

mandement not to come neere the coast of Africa to shorten his way; and he losing the sight of one of his ships went to seeke her, and in seeking of her lost his course, and sailed till he came within sight of the land. The generall was so long in seeking his ship, that the companie were wearie of it, and entreated him to leaue his enterprise. The next day they fell in sight of the coast of Brasil: whereupon the generall commanded a barke to goe to land and seeke an hauen: which they did, and found a good and safe hauen, and they named it Puerto Seguro, that is to say, the Safe Hauen, standing on the south side in 17 degrees of latitude. From thence they sailed towardes the Cape of Bona Speraça and Melinde, and crossed ouer to the riuer of Cochin, which before was not knowne, where they laded themselues with pepper, and at their returne Sancho de Thouar discouered the citie of Sofala vpon the coast of Africa.

Puerto Seguro in Brazil.

Sofala.

In this same yeere 1500 it is reported that Gaspar Cortereal craued a generall licence of the king Emmanuel[1] to discouer the New found land. He went from the Island

---

com treze velas, com regimento que se afastasse da costa D'Africa, para encurtar a via. E tendo hũa nao perdida em sua busca perdeo a derrota, & indo fora della, toparã finaes da terra, por onde o capitão môr foy em sua busca tantos dias, q' os d'armada lhe requererão que deixasse aquella profia: mas ao outro dia virão aa costa do Brasil. E mandou o capitam môr hum nauio apalpar se achaua porto, tornou, dizendo, que achaua bem & seguro, & assi lhe poserão o nome, & dizem que está da parte do sul em dezasete graos daltura. Daqui se fizerã à vela na volta do cabo de Boa Esperança & de Melinde, & atrauessarão á outra banda, & no rio de Cochim que se ainda nã sabia, & carregarão de pimẽta. E à tornada Sãcho de Thouar descobrio a cidade de çofala.

Neste mesmo anno de 1500 diz q' pedio Gaspar corte real licença a el Rey dom Manoel pera yr descobrir a terra Noua. Partio da

---

[1] Don Manuel.

Terçera with two ships well appointed at his owne cost, and he sailed vnto that climate which standeth vnder the north in 50 degrees of latitude, which is a land nowe called after his name; and he came home in safetie vnto the citie of Lisbon: and making another time this voiage the ship was lost wherein he went, and the other came backe into Portugall. Wherefore his brother, Michael Cortereal, went to seeke him with three ships well appointed at his owne cost; and when they came vnto that coast, and found so many entrances of riuers and hauens, euery ship went into her seuerall riuer, with this rule and order, that they all three should meete againe the 20 day of August. The two other ships did so, and they seeing that Michael Cortereal was not come at the day appointed, nor yet afterwards in a certaine time, returned backe into the realme of Portugall, and neuer heard any more newes of him nor yet any other memorie. But that countrey is called the land of Cortereall vnto this day.

Terra Corterealis.

Many entrances of riuers in the northwest.

In the yeere 1501, in the moneth of March, John de Noua departed from the citie of Lisbon with fower ships,

Barros, decad. 1, lib. 5, cap. 10.

---

ilha terceira com dous nauios armados á sua custa, foy àquelle clima que está debaixo do nortc em cincoẽta graos daltura. He terra que se agora chama de seu nome, tornou a saluamento á cidade de Lixboa. Fazendo outra vez este caminho, se perdeo o nauio em que elle hia, & o outro tornou a Portugal. Pola qual causa seu yrmão Miguel corte real foy em sua busca cõ tres nauios armados á sua custa. Chegados àquella costa, como virão muytas bocas de rios & abras, entrou cada hum pela sua com regimento que se ajũtassẽ todos ate vinte dias do mes Dagosto: os dous nauios assi o fizerão. E vendo que não vinha Miguel corte real ao prazo, nem despois algum tempo, se tornarã a este Reyno, sem nũca mais delle se saber noua, nem ficar outra memoria, se não chamarse esta terra dos Corte reaes ainda agora.

No anno de 1501 & mes de Março, partio João de noua com quatro velas da cidade de Lixboa, & alem da linha da parte do sul

and passed the line on the south side into 8 degrees of latitude, and he discouered an island, which he called the Isle de Ascension: and he went vnto Mosambique, and to Melinde, and from thence he crossed ouer vnto the other side, where they tooke lading, and so came back and doubled the Cape, and found an island called Santa Helena, being but a small thing, but yet of great importance in respect of the situation thereof.

Isle de Ascension.

The Isle of Santa Helena.

In this same yeere 1501 and in the moneth of May there departed out of Lisbon three ships, upon the commandement of Emmanuel[1] the king, to discouer the coast of Brasil; and they sailed in the sight of the Canaries, and from thence to Cape Verde, where they refreshed themselues in the towne of Bezequiche, and passed from thence beyond the line southward, and fell with the land of Brasill in five degrees of latitude, and so went forward till they came in 32 degrees, little more or lesse, according as they accounted it, and from thence they came backe in the moneth of Aprill, because it was there at that time cold and tempestuous. They

Bezequiche.

Brasil discouered to 32 degrees.

---

em oyto graos daltura descubrirā a ilha a que poserao nome da Concepção[2] & forão a Mozambique, & de Melinde atrauessaram a outra banda, tomādo carregase tornaram, & dobrādo o cabo em dezasete graos daltura, acharam a ilha aque poseram nome de santa Elena cousa pequena, mas muito nomeada.

Neste mesmo anno de 501 & mes de Mayo partirā tres nauios da cidade de Lixboa por mandado del Rey dom Manoel, a descobrir ha costa do Brazil, & foram a ver vista das Canarias, & da hi a cabo Verde, tomarā refresco em Beziquiche, passada a linha da parte do sul, foram tomar terra no Brazil em cinco graos daltura, & forā por ella ate trinta & dous pouco mais ou menos, segundo sua cōta, donde se tornaram no mes de Abril por auer já la frio,

[1] Don Manuel.

[2] There is here some confusion betwixt the names Conceicão and Ascensão. The discovery of Ascension is attributed to Tristran da Cunha in 1508.

were in that voiage fifteene monethes, and came to Lisbon againe in the beginning of September, 1502.

In the yeere 1502, one Alfonso Hoieda went to discouer Terra firma, and followed his course till he came to the prouince of Vraba. Gomara, historiæ general, lib. 2. Vraba.

The next year following, also, one Roderigo Bastidas of Siuill went out with two carauels at his owne cost, and the first land of the Antiles that he saw was an island, which he named Isla Verde, that is, the Greene Island, standing fast by the Island of Guadalupe, towards the land; and from thence they took their course towards the west to Santa Martha, and Cape De la Vela, and to Rio Grande or the great riuer, and they discouered the hauen of Zamba, the Coradas, Carthagena, and the islands of S. Barnard of Baru, and Islas de Arenas, and went forward vnto Isla fuerte, and to the point of Caribana standing at the end of the Gulfe of Vraba, where they had sight of the Farallones standing on the other side hard by the riuer of Darien, and from Cape De la Vela vnto this place are two hundred leagues[1]; and

---

& tormenta, poseram neste descobrimento & viagẽ quinze mezes, por tornarem a Lixboa na entrada de Setembro.

¶ Neste anno ou no seguinte, forã ao descobrimento da noua Espanha Alonso de hijada, & trouxe sua derrota até reconhecer a prouincia de Sinta. E no anno seguinte partio Rodrigo de bastidas de Seuilha, com duas carauellas armadas à sua custa & ha primeira terra que das Antilhas tomaram, foy hũa ylha a que poseram nome Verde, que está junto Daguadalupe contra a terra, & tomado na mão ha volta contra ho Ponente a sancta Martha, & a cabo dauella & ao Rio grande, & descobriram ho porto do Zamba, hos Coroados, Cartagena, & has ylhas de sam Bernardo de Baru, & has areas, foram diante à ylha forte, & a ponta da Caribana, que estaa no cabo do golfam de Vraba, vieram hos Farelones, que estam da outra banda junto Dariem, & do cabo da villa atee esta

[1] The distance from Cape de la Vela to the Point of Caribona is about one hundred and fifteen leagues.

it standeth in 9 degrees and two parts of latitude. From thence they crossed over vnto the island of Jamaica, where they refreshed themselues. In Hispaniola they graued their ships because of the[1] holes which certaine wormes of the water had eaten in the planks. In that country they got fower hundred markes of golde, although the people there be more warlike than in Noua Spania, for they poison their arrowes which they shoote.

The fourth voiage of Columbus.

In this same yeere, 1502, Christopher Columbus entered[2] the fourth time into his discouerie with fower ships at the commandement of Don Fernando, to seeke the Streight, which, as they said, did diuide the land from the other side, and he carried with him Ferdinando, his sonne. They went first to the Island of Hispaniola, to Jamaica, to the riuer Azua, to the Cape of Higueras, and vnto the Islands Gamares, and to the Cape of Honduras, that is to say, the Cape of the Depthes; from thence they sailed towards the east vnto the Cape Gracias a Dios, and discouered the prouince and riuer of Veragua, and Rio Grande, and others, which

Gomara, historiæ general, lib. 1, cap. 24.

Cabo de Higueras.

Cabo de Hunduras.

Cabo de Gracias a Dios. Veragua.

---

enseada a [cem ?] trinta legoas, estaa em noue graos & meyo daltura. Daqui atrauessaram ha ylha de Zamayca, onde tomaram refresco, & na Espanhola deram com hos nauios aa costa pelo gusano que ha muyto, leuarem quarenta marcos douro que por essa terra resgataram, ainda que ha gente da terra he mays guerreira que ha na Noua Espanha, & tiram com erua.

No anno de quinhẽtos & dous, tornou Christouam Colom ha quarta vez a este descobrimento com quatro nauios per mandado del Rey dom Fernando a buscar ho estreyto, que deziam cortar a terra a outra banda leuaua cõsigo dom Fernando seu filho: foram ter a ilha Espanhola, & de Jamaica, & ao Rhio Nheser, & ao cabo de Figueira, & ao ylhas dos Gamares, & ao porto das fonduras; & dahi contra o Leuante ao cabo de Graças a Deos, & descobrio a prouincia & Rio Veraga, & o Rio grande, & outros que os da terra

[1] Worms, which are numerous.

[2] Returned.

the Indians call Hieura. And from thence he went to the riuer of Crocodiles, which now is called Rio de Chagres, which hath his springs neere the South Sea, within fower leagues of Panama, and runneth into the North Sea; and so he went vnto the island which he called Isla de Bastimentos, that is, the Isle of Victuailes, and then to Puerto Bello, that is the faire hauen, and so unto Nombre de Dios, and to Rio Francisco, and so to the hauen of Retrete, and then to the Gulfe of Cabesa Cattiua, and to the Islands of Caperosa, and lastly to the Cape of Marble, which is two hundred leagues vpon the coast; from whence they began to turne again unto the Island of Cuba, and from thence to Jamaica, where he grounded his ships, being much spoiled and eaten with wormes.

Rio de Chagres.

Isla de Bastimentos.

Puerto Bello.

Nombre de Dios.

The Cape of Marble.

In this yeere also, 1052, Don Vasques de Gama, being now admirall, went again into India with 19 or 20 carauels. He departed from Lisbon the tenth day of Februarie, and by the last day of that moneth he came to an anker at Cape Verd, and from thence he went vnto Mosambique, and was the first that crost from that island into India; and

Barros, decad. i, lib. 6, cap. 2.

The Island of Mosambique.

---

chamam Hieura. E dahi foy ter ao Rio dos Lagartos, que se agora chama Chegres, que tem seu nascimento ao mar do Sul, & sae ao do Norte, passa de Panamaa quarenta[1] legoas, & foy aa ylha que pos nome dos Bastimentos, & ao porto Bello, & a nombre de Dios, & ao Rio Francisco, & ao porto do Retrete, & ao golfam de Secatiua, & aas ylhas de Caparrosa, & ao cabo de Marmol, que sam dozentas legoas de costa, donde começaram, tornou a ylha de Cuba, & dahi a Jamaica, onde acabou de dar com os quatro nauios a costa por serem ja muy gastados do gusano.

No anno de 502 tornou dom Vasco da Gama ja Almirante aa India, leuou xix ou vinte carauelas: partio de Lisboa a x de feuereiro, no fim delle surgio no Cabo verde, donde foy a Moçambique, & o primeiro q' desta ilha atrauesou pr'a India, & descobrio outra em quatro graos daltura, a que pos nome a do Almirante,

[1] Quatro ?

he discouered another in 4 degrees of latitude, which he called the Island of the Admirall, and there he took his lading of pepper and drugs, and left there one Vincent Sodre to keep the coast of India, with fiue ships.

These were the first Portugals that with an army did run along the coast of Arabia Felix. It is there so barren, that their cattell and camels are onely maintained with drie fish brought from the sea, whereof there is such plenty and abundance that the cats of the countrey doe vse to take them.

Cattell and camels fed with dried fish.

In the yeere following, as it is reported, one Antonie de Saldania discouered the island, which in old time was called Caradis, and now Socotora, and the Cape of Guardafu, which adioineth vnto that countrey.

Socotora. Cape de Guardafu.

In the yeere 1504,[1] Roderigo de Bastidas obtained licence of king Ferdinando, and by the means of John de Ledesma and others of Seuill named and furnished out two ships, hauing for his pilot one John de Cosa of St. Mary Port, and he went to discouer that part of Terra firma where now standeth Carthagena, being in ten degrees and a halfe of

Carthagena.

---

tomou carrega de pimenta & drogas, & deyxou la por guarda da costa da India cõ cinco vellas, Vicente sodrè, estes forã os primeiros Portugueses q' d'armada correram a costa de Arabia, a q' chamão Felix, ella he tam esteril que se nã mantem os gados & camelos senam em peixe seco que lhe do mar leuam, & seram elles tãtos q' os gatos os tomã. E no anno seguinte segundo dizem descobrio Antonio de Saldanha a ilha que se chama Dioscorodis, & agora Socotora, & o cabo de Guarda foy com aquela terra.

No anno de 1504 armaram Joam de cosa, vezinho de Sancta Maria del Puerto, & o piloto Rodrigo de bastidas, cõ ajuda de Joam de Ledesma, & outros de Seuilha, com licença del Rey dom Fernando quatro carauelas, & forã a descobrir a terra noua onde se chama Cartagena, q' está em dez graos & meyo da parte do

[1] John de Cosa, of Santa Maria del Puerto, and the pilot, Rodrigo de Bastidos, with the aid of John de Ledesma and others of Seville, by license from the king Ferdinand, fitted out four caravels.

northerly latitude. And it is said that they found the captaine, Luis de la Guerra, and they together tooke land in[1] the Isle of Codego, where they tooke sixe hundred persons of the sauages. And going farther along the coast they entred into the Gulfe of Vraba, where they found sand mingled with gold, being the first that was brought to the king, Don Ferdinando; from thence they returned to the citie of Santo Domingo, laden with slaues, without victuailes, because they of the countrey would not bargaine with them, which grew to their great trouble and griefe. Codego.

In the later end of this yeere died Ladie Isabella, Queene of Castile, which queen, while she liued, would not suffer any man of Arragon, Catalunia, Valencia, nor any borne in the countrey of Don Fernando her husband, to enter into these discoueries, saue those which were their seruants, or by speciall commandement; but only the Castilians, Biscaines, and those which were of her owne Signiories, by whom all the lands aforesaid were discouered. The death of Queene Isabella, 1504.

In the yeere 1505, vpon our Lady day in March, Fran-

---

norte, & diz que acharam aly o capitã Luis da guerra, & juntos todos saltarã na ilha do Codego, tomaram nella seis centas pessoas, foram por aquela costa, & entraram no Golfam de Vrába: & na area acharam ouro mesturado cõ ella, & foy o primeiro que se daly trouxe a el Rey dom Fernãdo oude foram á cidade de sam Domingos carregados de escrauos sem resgate nem mãtimento; porque os da terra nã quiseram contratar com elle lhe fizera muito dano. E no fim deste anno de 1504 falaceo a Raynha dona Isabel de Castella, & em quanto foy viua nã consentio que fossem do descobrimento da noua España, Aragões, Cathelões, Valencianos, nem nenhũs do patrimonio del Rey dom Fernando seu marido, saluo se fosse seu criado, ou por especial mandado, somente Castelhanos, Galegos, Biscaynhos, & os de seu senhorio que esta terra descobriram.

No anno de 1505 dia de Nossa Senhora de Março, partio dom

[1] Fell upon.

Barros, decad. 1, lib. 8, cap. 3. cisco de Almeida, Viceroy of India, tooke his course with 22 sailes towards India [by way of Brazil] as now is accustomed.

A fort built in Quiloa. He came vnto the city of Quiloa, where he built a fort, appointing one Peter Fereira to be captaine thereof; and

Angediua possessed. beyond Melinde he trauersed to the Island of Augediua, where he placed as captaine one Emmanuell Passania. In

Forts builded in Cananor and in Cochin. Cananor also he built another fort, giuing the captainship of it to Laurence de Brito. In Cochin he did the like, where Don Alfonso de Neronia was made captaine. This

A fort builded in Sofala. yeere one Peter de Anhaya did build the fortress of Sofala, whereof also himselfe was made captaine.

In the later end of this yeere [or at the beginning of the next] the viceroy commanded his sonne, whose name was Don Laurenço, to make some entrie upon the Islands of Maldiua, and with contrairie weather he arriued at the islands, which of ancient time were called Tragana, but the

Ceilan. Moores called them Ytterubenero, and we call them Ceilan, where he went on land, and made peace with the people there, and afterwards came back vnto Cochin, sailing along the coast and fully discouering it. In the middest of this

---

Francisco Dalmeyda, Viso Rey da Indio com vinte & duas vellas, fez seu caminho na volta do Brasil, como se ja costumaua. Chegado á cidade de Quiloa, assẽtou fortaleza, capitam della Pero ferreira, & alem de Melinde atraueouss a ilha Daugediua, onde fez capitã Manoel Paçanha. Em Cananor edificou outra, deu a capitania a Lourenço de Brito. Em Cochim o mesmo, & capitam dõ Affonso de Noronho. Neste anno fez Pero danhaya a fortaleza de Sofala, de que teue a capitania.

Na fim deste anno, ou na entrada do outro, mandou ho Viso rey a dom Lourenço seu filho ás ilhas de Maldiua, & com tempo contraria, arribou às ylhas, a que os antiguos chamaram Tragana & os mouros Itterubenero, & nos agora Ceilam, onde sahio em terra, & assentou paz com os della, tornou a Cochim ao longo da costa, deixandoa toda sabida.

No meo desta ylha estaa hum pico de pedra muy alto, & hũa

island there stands a rocke of stone, very high, hauing the signe of the foote of a man vpon the top of it, which they say to be the footestep of Adam, when he went up into the heauens, and the Indians haue it in great reuerence.

In the yeere 1506, after the death of the Queene of Spain, King Philip and Queene Joan his wife came into Spaine to take possession thereof, and King Don Fernando went into Arragon, being his owne patrimonie. In this same yeere the said King Philip died, and then Fernando came againe to gouerne Spain, and he gaue licence vnto all Spanyards to goe vnto the New land, and to the Antiles, but not to the Portugals. In this yeere, and in the moneth of May, Christopher Columbus died, and his son Don Diego Columbus succeeded in his roome.

The death of Philip the fyrst of Spaine, 1505.

The death of Christopher Columbus.

In the year 1506, and entring into the moneth of March, Tristan de Acunna and Alfonso de Albuquerque went into India with 14 ships in their companie, and sailed till they came to an anker at the towne of Bezequiche, where they refreshed themselves; and before they came to the Cape of Bona Sperança, in 37 degrees, they found certaine islands,

Barros, decad. 2, lib. 1, cap. 1.

Bezequiche is by Cape Verde.

---

pegada de homem, & na sumida delle que dizẽ ser do nosso padre Adam, quando sobio aos ceos, tem no os Indios em grande veneraçam.

No āno de 1506 depois da Raynha dona Isabel falecer, veyo el Rey Felipe, & a Raynha dona Ioana sua molher a Espanha tomar posse, el rey dom Fernando se foy Aragam por ser seu patrimonio: & neste mesmo anno faleceo el rey Felipe, & tornou gouernar Castella el rey dō Fernando, & deu licença aos Espanhoes que podessem hir aa terra noua & Antilhas, saluo os Portugueses. E neste mesmo anno & mes de Mayo faleceo Christouam columbo, & socedeo em seu lugar seu filho dom Diogo columbo.

Neste mesmo anno de 1506 & entrada do mes de Março, partio Tristam da cunha & Afōso Dalbuquerq' pera India, & xiiij. vellas ẽ sua cōpanhia, foy surgir em Bezequichi, pera refrescarem, & antes q' chegassem ao cabo de boa esperança ẽ trinta & sete graos

The Isles of Tristan de Acunna in 37 degrees.

which now are named the Isles of Tristan de Acunna, where they had such a tempest that therewithal the fleete was dispersed. Tristan de Acuna and Alfonso de Albuquerque went vnto Mossambique, and Aluaro Telez ran so far that

Samatra discouered.

he came to the Island of Samatra, and so backe againe vnto the Cape of Guardafu; hauing discouered many islands, sea, and land neuer seene before that time of any Portugall. Emmanuel Telez de Meneses was also driuen without the great island of S. Lawrence, and he ran along the coast thereof, and arriued at last at Mosambique, and there met with Tristan de Acuña, who was the first captaine that wintred there; and by them it was told that in this island was much ginger, cloues, and siluer; whereupon he went

The inland of S. Laurence discouered.

and discouered much of it within the land;[1] but, finding nothing, he came backe againe into Mozambique; from whence he sailed vnto Melinde, and ran along that coast,

Braua.

and entred into Braua, and from thence they crost ouer to

A fortress builded in Socotora. Barros, decad. 2, lib. 2, cap. 1.

the island of Socotora, where they built a fortresse, and made one Don Antonio de Noronia captaine thereof.

---

d'altura acharam hũas ylhas, q' se agora chamam de Tristam da cunha, onde lhe deu tam grande tormenta, q' se espalhou toda a frota. Tristam da cunha & Alfonso Dalbuquerque foram ter a Moçambiq', Aluaro telez, correo tã largo, q' foy a terra de Samatra, dõde se tornou ao cabo de Guardafui deixando descuberto muitas ylhas, mar, & terra, nũca ate aq'lle tẽpo por Portugueses vista.

Manoel telez de Meneses tambem varou por fora daquella gram ylha de sam Lourenço, & correo todas na costa, foy ter a Moçambique cõ Tristam da cunha, q' foy o primeiro capitam q' ali inuernara, & por lhe dizerem q' nesta ylha auia muito gengibre, crauo, & prata, tornou a descobrir muita della pella parte de dentro, & nam achando nada se tornou a Moçambique, donde partiram pera Melinde, correram aq'lla costa, sahiram em Braua, & dahi passaram aa ylha de Sacatoraa, onde fizeram fortaleza, capitam della dom Antonio de Noronha.

---

[1] The interior.

In the yeere 1507, in the moneth of August, Tristan de Acuña tooke shipping for India, and Alfonso de Albuquerque remained there with fiue or sixe ships to keepe the coast and entrie of the streight: but being not therewith satisfied, he tooke his course ouer vnto Arabia, and, running along that coast, he doubled the Cape of Rosalgate, standing vnder the tropicke of Cancer.

The Cape of Rosalgate.

In the year 1509, one Diego Lopez de Sequeira went out of Lisbon with fower sailes vnto the Island of Saint Laurence, and continued in his voiage almost a yeere, and in the moneth of May the same yeere he arriued in Cochin, where the viceroy gave him one ship more: and, in the beginning of the moneth of September, he tooke his course vnto Malacca, passing betweene the islands of Nicubar, and many others. He went also to the land of Samatra, to the cities of Pedir and Pacem, and all along by all that coast vnto the Island of Poluoreira, and the flats of Capacia: and from thence he went ouer vnto Malacca, standing in 2 degrees of latitude towards the north; but in that citie the people killed and tooke as prisoners some of his men: and thereupon he turned backe againe into India, hauing dis-

Barros, decad. 2, lib. 4, cap. 3. The Isle of S Laurence.

The Islands of Nicobar. Samatra.

The Isle of Poluoreira. The flats of Capacia.

No ano de 1507 no mes Dagosto partio Tristã da cunha p'a India: & Afõso dalbuq'rq' q' ali ficaua cõ v. ou vj. nauios p'a guarda da costa & boca daq'le estreito, não se contẽtando disto se passou Arabia, & correndo a toda, dobrou o cabo de Rosalgata, q' está no tropico de cancro.

No anno de quinhentos & noue partio Diogo lopez de Seq'yra de Lisboa cõ quatro velas pera ylha de Sam Lourẽço, andou derredor della q'si hũ anno, & no de noue & mes de Mayo chegou a Cochim, ho Visorey lhe deu mais hum nauio. E na entrada do mes de Setembro, partio pera Malaca, passou per entre as ylhas de Nicobar, & outras muytas: & foy a terra de Sumatra ás cidades de Pedir, & Pacem: & per toda essa costa ate a ylha da Poluoreira, & baixos de Capacea: & dahi se passaram a Malaca, que está em dous graos daltura da parte do norte, & por lhe matarem & capti-

couered in this voiage fiue hundred leagues. This Island of Samatra is the first land wherein we know man's flesh to be eaten by certaine people which liue in the mountaines called Bacas, who vse to gilde their teeth. They hold opinion that the flesh of the blacke people is sweeter then the flesh of the white. The buffes, kine, and hennes which are in that countrey are in their flesh as blacke as any inke. They say that there are certaine people there called Daraque Dara, which haue tailes like vnto sheepe; and some of their welles yield oile.

Rarities in Sumatra.

In Sumatra the buffes, kine, and hennes haue flesh as blacke as inke.

Peoples hauing tailes like sheepe.

The king of Pedir is reported to haue a riuer in his land running with oile; which is a thing not to be maruelled at, seeing it is found written, that in Bactria there is also a well of oile: it is farther said that there groweth here a tree, the iuice whereof is strong poison; and, if it touch the blood of a man, he dieth immediately; but if a man doe drinke of it, it is a soueraigne remedie against poison, so seruing both for life and death. Here also they doe coine peeces of gold, which they call drachmas, brought into the land, as they say, by the Romanes; which seemeth to haue some resem-

Gold coined in Samatra.

---

uarem nesta cidade gente, se tornou pera à India deixãdo quinhentas legoas descubertas.

Esta ylha de Sãmatra he a primeira terra q' la sabemos, em q' se come carne humana, hũas gentes que viuem nas serras que se chamam Bacas, douram hos dentes, dizem que a carne dos homẽs pretos he mais saborosa que a dos brancos: & assi as bufaras, vacas, galinhas que ha naquellas partes, sam de carnes tam pretas como esta tinta, Diziã auer ahi homẽs a que chamão Dara que dara, que tem rabos como carneiros, aqui ha azeite que tiram de poços: El Rey de Pedir me disse q' por sua terra corria hũ rio delle, nam se deue dauer por muito, pois se acha escripto, que na Batriana ha hũa fonte doleo: & assi contam auer aqui hũa aruore que o çumo della he forte peçonha, & se toca em sangue logo a pessoa morre, & bebendoo he cousa muy prouada contra ella, assi que dà morte & vida: batese aqui moeda douro a que chamam

blance of truth, because that from that place forward there is no coined gold; but that which is thus coined doth run currant in the buying of marchandise and other things.

In the year 1508, one Alfonso de Hoieda, and Diego de recusa, with the fauour of Don Fernando, purposed to goe vnto tierra firma to conquer the prouince of Darien. He went foorth at his owne charges, and discouered the firme land, where it is called Vraba, which he named Castilia del Oro, that is, Golden Castilia, bicause of the gold which they found among the sand along the coast. And they were the first Spanyards that did this. For this, one governed Vraba, the other Beraga. Alfonso de Hoieda went first from the Island of Hispaniola and the citie of San Domingo with fower ships and three hundred soldiers, leauing behinde him the bachiler[1] Anciso, who afterwards compiled a booke of these discoueries. And after him there went also one ship with victuals, munition, and 150 Spanyards. He went on land at Carthagena, but there the people of the countrey tooke, slew, and eate 80 of his soldiers, whereupon he grew uery weake.[2]

Gomara, historiæ general, lib. 3, cap. 7.

Castilia del Oro.

The booke of the Bachiler Anciso of these discoueries.

---

dragmas, dizem q' os Romãos a trouxeram a esta terra, parece algũa cousa, porque daqui por diãte nam se bate moeda douro, mas corre se ele por mercadoria.

No anno de 1508 armaram a sua custa com licença del Rey dom Fernando, Alonso de hijada, & Diogo de recusa, pera hir pouvar & conquistar a prouincia Doriem, & descobrir a terra firme, onde se chama Vraba q' poserão nome Castella do ouro, pello q' acharam na area ao longo da praya, & foram os primeiros Castelhanos q' isto fizeram: porq' hum tinha a gouernança de Vraba, & outro de Beraga. Partio primeiro Alonso de hijada da ylha Espanhola, & cidade de Sanctiago cõ quatro nauios & trezẽtos soldados, deixando o Bacharel Ansiso, q' depois fez hũ liuro deste descobrimẽto, p'a yr tras elle hũ nauio cõ mantimẽtos & moniçõoes, & cẽto & cincoẽta Espanhoes. Chegou Alõso de hijada a Cartagena, onde tomou

[1] Bachelor of Arts.

[2] Angry.

Beata is a prouince in the west part of Hispaniola.

In this year 1508, one Diego de Niquesa prepared seuen ships in the port of Beata to goe vnto Veragua, and carried in them almost 800 men. When he came to Carthagena, he found there Alfonso de Hoieda forespoiled with his former losse;[1] but then they both ioined together, and went on land, and auenged themselves of the people [and went each to his government]. And in this voiage Diego de Niquesa went and discouered the coast called Nombre de Dios, and went vnto the sound of Darien, and called it Puerto de Misas, which is vpon the riuer of Pito. When they were come vnto Veragua, he went on shore with his armie,[2] his soldiers being out of hope to returne to Hispaniola. [And though this stratagem of war was put in practice afterwards by Fernan Cortez, he was not the first in that land, as some hold and believe]. Alfonso de Hoieda began a fortress in Caribana against the Caribes;[3] which was the first towne that the Spanyards builded in the Firme land; and in Nom-

Gomara, gen. hist., lib. 3, cap. 6.

---

terra, & os dela lhe matarão & comeram oytenta soldados, de que ficou muyto agastado.

Neste mesmo āno de 1508 armou Diogo de Nequisa no porto de Beata sete vellas pera hir a Beraga, & leuou nellas perto de oytocentos homēs. Chegado a Cartagena, achou ahi Alonso de hijada assaz agastado pello q' lhe socedera, sahiram ambos em terra, tomaram vingança, & se foram cada hum a sua gouernança, Diogo de recusa foy descobrindo a costa que he de nombre de Dios aos Roquedos de Darię, chamou porto de Misas ao rio Pito: chegado a Beraga deu com a armada á costa, por os soldados perderem esperança de tornarē a Espanhola: & ainda q' este ardil de guerra tiuesse despois Fernam cortez, nā foy elle primeyro naquella terra (como algus tem, & cuidam) Alonso de hijada começou hua fortaleza em Caribana Solar dos Caribas, & foy a primeira villa q'

[1] Very angry at what had happened to him.

[2] He ran his ships on shore that his soldiers might lose the hope of returning to Hispaniola.

[3] Country of the Caribs?

bre de Dios they built another, and called it Nuestra Sennora de la Antigua. They builded also the towne of Vraba. And there they left for their captaine and lieutenant one Francis Pisarro, who was there much troubled [and afterwards discovered Peru]. They builded other towns also, whose names I here omit. But these captaines had not that good successe which they hoped for [and this is enough for my purpose]. Nuestra Sennora de la Antigua builded.

In the yeere 1509, the second Admirall, Don Diego Columbus went into the Island of Hispaniola with his wife and houshold And she being a gentlewoman carried with her many other women of good families, which were there married, and so the Spanyards and Castillians began to people the countrey:[1] for Don Fernando, the king, had giuen them licence to discouer and people the townes of Hispaniola; so that the same place grew to be famous and much frequented. The foresaid Admirall also gaue order to people the Island of Cuba, which is very great and large, Many gentlewomen went to dwell in Hispaniola. Cuba peopled.

---

os castelhanos em terra firme fizerã, & assi em Nombre de Dios, cidade de nossa senhora del antiga, & a villa de Vraba, donde deixaram por capitam & teniente Francisco piçarro, q' leuou ahi assaz trabalho, (& descobrirã despois a de Peru) E assi fizeram outras q' nam nomeo, por que estes capitães nam tiueram tã bom socesso como cuydauã, & isto abasta a meu proposito.

No anno de 1509 chegou ho segundo Almirante dom Diogo colom a ylha Espanhola com sua molher & casa, & como era nobre & fidalga, leuou muitas molheres & de boa casta q' la casaram, & começaram de Castelhanos de encher a terra, porque el Rey dom Fernando tinha dado licença que podessẽ la yr descobrir, pouvar, todo los pouos de Espanha, por onde aq'lla terra foy mais ennobrecida & frequẽtada & tambẽ este Almirante deu ordẽ como se pouoasse a ilha da Cuba, q' he cousa grande & pos nella pera isso

---

[1] And began to fill the land with Castilians.

and placed there as his lieutenant one Diego Velasques, who went with his father in the second voiage.

Barros, decad. 2, lib. 5, cap. 10, & lib. 6, cap. 2. Barros, decad. 2, lib. 6, cap. 5.

In the yeere 1511, in the moneth of Aprill, Alfonso de Albuquerque went from the citie of Cochin vnto Malacca. In which yeere and moneth[1] the Chineans went from Malaeca into their owne countrey, and Alfonso sent with them [to Siam] (for master[2]) a Portugall called Duarte Fernandes, with letters [and greeting] (also, and order[3]) vnto the king of the Mantias, which now is called Sian, standing in the south.

The Streight of Cincapura.

[Coasting along], they passed through the streight of Cincapura, and sailed towards the north, went along the coast

Odia the chiefe citie of Siam.

of Patane, vnto the citie of Cuy, and from thence to Odia, which is the chiefe citie of the kingdome, standing in 14 degrees of northerly latitude. The king greatly honoured and welcomed Duarte Fernandes, being the first Portugall that he had seene, and with him he sent backe ambassadours to Albuquerque. They passed ouer land towards

Tanaçerim.

the west unto the citie of Tanaçerim, standing upon the sea on the other side in 12 degrees, where they imbarked them-

---

por seu adiãtado a Diogo valhasquez que fora com seu pay na armada segũda.

No anno de 1511, & mes de Abril partio Afonso dalboquerque da cidade de Cochim pera Malaca & neste mesmo anno, & mes de Julho forã os Chins de Malaca pera sua terra, & mandou Afonso dalbuquerque cõ elles a Syão hum Portugues q' se chamaua Duarte fernandez com cartas & recado a el rey dos Muãtais que agora chamamos sião ao Sul, ao lõgo da terra passaram pelo estreito de Sincapura & tomaram a norte correndo aquella costa de Pãpatane, ate a cidade de Cuy, & della ao Dia, q' he cabeça, deste reyno, que estara ate quatorze graos daltura. El Rey fez a Duarte fernandez por ser o primeiro Portugues q' vira muita merce & honra, & madou cõ elle embaixadores a Afonso dalbuquerq', atrauessarã pola terra a loeste a cidade de Tanasarim q' esta no mar da outra banda em doze

[1] And in the same year and month of July.
[2] Dele.
[3] Dele. And greeting.

selues in two ships, and sailed along the coast unto the citie of Malacca, leauing it all discouered [so much as it can be by sailing along a coast].

The people of this countrey of Sian are people that eate of all kinde of beastes, or vermine [or fish which land and water produce]. They haue a delight[1] to carrie round bels within the skin of their priuie members, which is forbidden to the king and the religious people. It is said that of all[2] other people of those parts, they be most vertuous and honest. They commend themselues much for their chastitie and pouertie. They bring no hennes nor doues vp in their houses [nor other female thing]. This kingdom hath in length 250 leagues, and in bredth 80 [besides those who are subject to it]. Of this only kingdom the king may bring foorth into the field thirtie thousand elephants, when he goeth to warre, besides those which remaine in the cities for the garde of them. The king much esteemeth a white elephant, and (a red)[3] one also, [with red] (that hath)[3] eies like vnto flaming fire.

M. Ralph Fitch which had beene in this country brought diuers of these bels into England.

There is in this countrey a certaine small vermine, which

---

graos, embarcados em dous nauios se vieram ao longo da costa ate a cidade de Malaca, deixando a toda vista, segundo alcançã os que vam per mar ao longo de terra.

A gente deste reyno de Syão he gentia, come toda alimaria, bicho, pescado q' a terra & agoa produzem, prezã fe de trazer cascaneis em suas naturas, a el Rey & religiosos he vedado: & dizem que sam dos mais virtuosos & honestos q' ha na redondeza, prezam se muito de castidade & pobreza: em sua casa nam criam galinha pomba, nem outra cousa femea. Terá este Reino dozentas & cincoẽta legoas em comprido, & oitenta de largo, afora os q' lhe obedecẽ. Deste soo reyno poẽ el rey em cãpo trinta mil alifantes de guerra, afora os q' lhe ficam nas cidades por guarda, tẽ hũ branco em grande estima, & outro ruyuo de olhos q' escamecham, como fogo. Ha nestas terras hũ bicho peq'no, q' se lhes pega na

[1] To wear rings, etc. [2] The world they be, etc. [3] Dele.

vseth to cleaue fast to the trunke of the elephant, and draweth the blood of the elephant, and so he dieth thereof. The skull of this vermine is so hard, that the shot of a hand-gun cannot enter it: they haue in their liuers the figures of men and women, which they call Toketa, and are much like vnto a mandrake. And they affirme that he which hath one of them about him cannot die with the stroke of any iron. They haue also wilde kine in this countrey, in the heads of whome they finde stones, which are of vertue to bring good hap and fortune to marchants.

The liuer of a little beast good against any wound of iron.

After that Duarte Fernandes had been with the Mantales or people of Siam, Alfonso de Albuquerque sent thither a knight called Ruy Nunnez de Acunna, with letters and ambassage vnto the king of the Seguies, which we call Pegu. He went in a Iunco of the countrey in sight of the Cape Rachado, and from thence went vnto the citie of Pera which standeth fast by the riuer Salano,[1] and [to] many other villages standing all along this riuer, where Duarte Fernandes had beene before, vnto the cities of Tanaçerim and of Martauan, standing in 15 degrees toward the north, and

Pegu.

Pera.

---

trõba, & os ensanguenta ate q' os matã, tem a concha tã dura, q' hũ arcabuz o nã passa, & cria nos figados hũa figura de homẽs ou molheres ã q' chamã toy'ta, q' he coma mẽdracola, & quẽ as traz consigo, dizẽ q' nam podẽ morrer a ferro, & nas cabeças de vacas brauas achãse pedras muy ditosas pera mercadores.

Depois de Duarte fernandez hir aos Mantuis, mandou Affonso Dalbuquerque hũ caualeiro q' se chamaua Ruy nunez da cunha cõ cartas & embaixada ao Rey dos Sequĩs, q' nós chamamos Pegus, foy em hũ junco dos da terra ao lõgo della, & vista do cabo rachado, & dahi à cidade de Perá, & aquẽ da Iunsalão, & outras muytas pouoações q' jazem ao longo desta ribeira, por onde ja Duarte fernandez viera, ate a cidade de Tanasarim, & de Bartabão, que está en quinze graos da parte do Norte, & á cidade de

[1] And on this side of the river Solano ?

the citie of Pegu standeth in 17. This was the first Portugall which trauailed in that kingdome, and he gaue good information of that countrey and of the people, which vse to wear bels[1] in their priuities, euen as the Mantales doe. Master Raiph Fitch saw this in Pegu also.

In the end of this yeere 1511, Alfonso de Albuquerque sent three ships to the Islands of Banda and Maluco. And there went as generall of them one Antonio de Breu, and with him also went one Francis Serrano; and in these ships there were 120 persons. [Not more vessels nor men went to discouer New Spain with C. Columbus, nor with Vasco de Gama to India; nor in comparison with these is Maluco less wealthy, nor ought it to be held in less esteem.] They passed through the Streight of Saban, and along the Island of Samatra, and [in sight of] many others, leauing them on the left hand, towards the east; and they called them the Salites. They went also to the Islands of Palimbam and Lusuparam, from whence they sailed by the noble Island of Iaua, and they ran their course east, sailing betweene it and the island of Madura. The people of this island are very Barros, decad. 2, lib. 6, cap. 7. The Iles of Banda and Maluco. The Salites. Iaua. Madura.

Pegu em xvij. Este foy o primeiro Portugues q' trilhou aq'le reyno, & deu enformação da terra & de como traziã cascaueis como os Muãtais.

No fim deste anno de 1511 mandou Affonso Dalbuquerque tres nauios ás ilhas de Banda & Maluco: & por capitão mór delles Antonio Dabreu, & hum Francisco serrão: hiam nelles cento & vinte pessoas, porq' nam foram mais velas nẽ homẽs ao descobrimento da noua Espanha com Christouam columbo, nem com Vasco da Gama á India, porq' Maluco depois destes nam he menos em riqueza, nẽ se deue de ter em menos estima, foram pello estreito de Sabam ao lõgo da ylha de Samatra, & à vista doutras que ficam da mão esquerda contra o Leuante q' chamam dos Salites, ate as ylhas de Palimbão, Lusuparam, donde atrauessaram pella nobre ylha da Jaua, foram a Leste correndo sua costa, per antre ella & a ylha da madeira. A gente desta ylha he mais belicosa, & que

[1] Rings.

warlike and strong, and doe[1] little regard their liues [as any known in the world]. The women also are there hired for the warres: and they fall out often together, and kill one another, as the Mocos doe, [and they contrive that cocks should fight with spurs, as their principal diversion is blood-shedding], delighting onely in shedding of blood.

Bali. Beyond the Island of Iaua they sailed along by another called Bali; and then came also vnto others called Aujaue, çambaba, Solor, *Galav, Mallua, Vitara, Rosalanquin, and †Arus, from whence are brought delicate[2] birds, which are of great estimation because of their feathers: they came also to other islands lying in the same parallele on the south side in 7 or 8 degrees of latitude. And they be so nere the one to the other, that they seeme at the first to be one entire and maine land. The course by these islands is aboue fiue hundred leagues. The ancient cosmographers call all these islands by the name Iauos; but late experience hath found their names to be very diuers, as you see. Beyonde these [it is said] there are other islands (towards the north,)[3]

---

menos tem em cõta a vida que se sabe na redondeza, & dizem q' as molheres ganham soldo polas armas, & por qualquer cousa se desafiam & matam hũs a outros, como se fazẽ a Mocos, & inuentam pelejarem galos cõ naualhas, porq' ho principal seu desenfadamento he sanguinolento.

Alem desta ylha da Jaua, vam ao longo doutra q' se chama Balle, & outra logo (q' se diz) Anjano, Simbaba, Solor, o Galao, Mauluca, Vitara, Rosolanguim, Arus, donde vẽ os passaros myrrados, q' sam mui estimados pera penachos, & outras q' jazem nesta corda da parte do Sul, em sete ou oito graos daltura, & tam juntas hũas com as outras, q' parece toda hũa terra. Auera nesta derrota mais de quinhentas legoas hos Cosmographos lhes chamaram as Jaoas, ainda que agora tem nome differentes como aqui vedes. Auante destas ylhas dizem que ha outras de gentes mais aluas,

---

* Or Guliam. † Or Aru.

[1] As. [2] Dried. [3] Not in Portuguese.

which are inhabited with whiter people going arraied in shirts, doublets and slops, like vnto the Portugals, hauing also money of siluer. The gouernours among them doe carrie in their hands red staues, whereby they seem to haue some affinitie with the people of China, [and not only these but] there are other islands and people about this place, which are redde ;[1] and it is reported that they are of the people of China.

The people of the Iles of Maluco weare such apparell.

Antonie de Breu and those that went with him tooke their course toward the north, where is a smal island called Gumnape (or Ternate),[2] from the highest place whereof there fall continually into the sea flakes or streams like vnto fire ; which is a wonderfull thing to behold. From thence they went to the Islands of Burro and Amboino,[3] and came to an anker in an hauen of it called Guliguli, where they went on land and tooke a village standing by the riuer, where they found dead men hanging in the houses ; for the people there are eaters of man's flesh. Here the Portugals burnt the ship wherein Francis Serrano was, for she was old and

Ternate.

Burro. Amboino. Guliguli.

---

que andam vestidas de camisas, gibões, & ceroulas como portugueses, & tem moeda de prata, os q' gouernam a republica, trazê nas mãos varas vermelhas, por onde parece que deuem de ser da China, & nam tam somente estas, mas ha por aqui outras de gentes pintadas, que dizem ser dos Chins pouoadas.

Antonio Dabreu & os que com elle hiam, tomaram sua derrota contra o norte dhũa ylheta que se chama o Gumuapè : porque do mais alto della corre sempre, & de contino ate o mar ribeiras de fogo, cousa muito pera ver. Daqui foram aa ylha de Burro, & Damboino, & costearam a costa daq'lla q' se chama de Muar Damboino, surgiram em hũ porto, q' se diz Guli Guli, saltaram em terra, tomaram hũa pouoaçam que ali estaua, & acharam nas casas homẽs mortos dependurados : porque comem carne humana, onde queimaram a nao em que hia Francisco serrão por ser ja

[1] Painted.

[2] Not in Portuguese.

[3] And coasted along what is called Muar d'Amboina.

Cloues, nutmegs, and mace are in 8 degrees toward the south.

rotten. They went to a place on the other side standing in 8 degrees toward the south, where they laded cloues, nutmegs, and mace, in a Junco or barke, which Francis Serrano bought here.

They say that not farre from the Islands of Banda there is an island where there breedeth nothing else but snakes, and the most are in one caue in the middest of the land [some great and others small go always rolled together]. This is a thing not much to be woondred at; for as much as in the Levant Sea, hard by the Isles of Maiorca and Minorca, there is another island of old named Ophiusa, and now Formentera, wherein there is great abundance of these vermine: and in the rest of the islands lying by it there are none.

In the yeere 1512 they departed from Banda toward Malacca, and on the baxos or flats of Luçapinho Francis Serrano perished[1] in his Junke or barke, from whence escaped[2] vnto the Isle of Mindanao [with] nine or ten Portugals which were[3] with him, and the kings of Maluco sent

Mindanao.

Maluco.

---

velha, & foram ter a banda q' estaa em oito graos da parte do Sul, dõde carregaram de crauo, noz, e maça, e hũ junco q' Francisco Serram aqui comprara. Dize q' nam muito lõge destas ylhas de Banda ha hũa em q' senã cria senã cobras, & as mais nũa coua q' tem no meo, hũas grandes & outras peq'nas, andão sẽpre enroladas, mas nã se deue dauer por muyto, tanto como os da terra, fazẽdo disto espãto pois os nossos deixarã escrito q' junto das ilhas de Mayorca & Menorca auia hũa q' se chamaua Eufuria, ẽ q' auia muita cãtidade destas bichas, nã as auẽdo ẽ todalas outras ilhas jũto cõellas.

No ãno de 1512 partiram de Banda pera Malaca, & nos baixos de Lusupino, se perdeo Francisco Serram cõ o seu junco, donde se tornou ailha de Mĩdanao cõ ix ou x portugueses q' cõ ele hia, & os reis d' Maluco mãdarã por eles estes foram hos primeyros

[1] Was wrecked with his junk. [2] Had returned. [3] Went.

for them. These were the first Portugals that came to the Islands of Cloues, which stand from the equinoctiall line towardes the north in one degree, where they liued seuen or eight yeeres. [A. Dabreu made his way to Malacca having discovered all the sea and land above named.]

The island of Gumnape, now called Ternate, is much to be admired, for that it casteth out fire.[1] There were some princes of the Moores and couragious Portugals which determined to goe neere to the firie place to see what it was, but they could neuer come neere it [so as to give any account.] But Antonie Galuano hearing of it, vndertooke to goe vp to it, and did so [with the help of God and our Lady, and the thing that most astonished him in this journey was] (and found)[2] a riuer so extreme cold, that he could not suffer his hand in it, nor yet put any of the water in his mouth: [it appears that nature has provided there this cold, as in other waters immense heat]. And yet this place

---

Espanhoes que viram as ylhas do crauo, que jazem da linha contra ho Norte em hum grao, onde esteueram sete ou oyto annos. Antonio Dabreu fez seu caminho pera Malaca, deixando descuberto todo aquelle mar & terra nomeadas.

A ylha de Guape em que está nossa fortaleza, q' se agora chama Ternate, he das mais altas cousas que no mundo se sabe, deita fogo pello mais alto, cousa tam espantosa q' se nam sabe la falar em outra. Algũs principes mouros, & nobres portugueses de altos pensamẽtos, cometeram per vezes ver ysto, mas nunca la chegaram: pello que se fazia ainda mõr conta, o q' Antonio Galuão ouuindo, determinou cometelo, quis deos & nossa senhora q' lhe deu cima & da cousa q' se mais espantou desta jornada, foy por hũa ribeira tam frigidissima, q' nam auia pesoa q' podesse ter a mão nella, nẽ metela na boca: parece q' proueo a natureza ali esta

---

[1] The Island of Guape, where our fort is situated, is one of the most sublime objects which is known in the world; it throws out fire from its summit, a thing so frightful that its equal cannot be spoken of.

[2] Dele.

standeth vnder the line, where the sunne continually burneth. In these Islands of Maluco there is a kinde of men that have spurres on their ankles like vnto cocks. And it was told me by the king of Tydore, that in the Islands of Batochina there were people that had tailes, and [in Amboine a he goat that gaue milk from some teats he has between his testicles] (had a thing like vnto a dug between their cods, out of the which there came milke.[1] There are smal hennes also which lay their egges vnder the ground aboue a fathome and an halfe, and the egges are bigger than duck's egges, and many of these hennes are blacke in their flesh. There are hogs also with hornes, and parats which prattle much, which they call noris. There is also a riuer of water so hot, that whatsoeuer liuing creature cometh into it, their skins will come off, and yet fish breede in it. There are crabs which be very sweete, and so strong in their clawes, that they will break the iron of a pikeaxe. There be others

Monstrous men.

Batochina.

---

frialdade, como em outras agoas à immensa quẽtura: sendo isto debaxio da linha, onde continuadamente o sol reuerbera.

Há nestas ylhas de Maluco homẽs com esporões nos artelhos como galos, disse me el rey de Tidore q' na ilha da Batachina os auia cõ rabos & nas Dãboino hũ bode q' deitaua leite por hũs peitos q' antre os cõpanhões tinha: ha lá galinhas peq'nas q' debaixo da terra mais de braça & mẽa, põe ouos mayores q' patas: ha muitas de carne pretas & porcos com cornos, & papagayos muy chorarreiros a que chamã Noris: ha hũa ribeira dagoa tam qũente que se pela tudo nella, & cria peixes: ha cranguejos dos matos muy saborosos & tam forçosos das bocas q' quebram o ferro de hũa azagaya: ha outras no mar velosos & pequenos, que quẽ os come emprouiso morre: ha hũas ostras a q' chamã Bras, que tem tamanhas conchas, que baptizam nellas: ha no mar pedra vina q' nasce & cria como peixe: & faz cal muy boa, & se a tiram fora & está ate que morre nũca mais arde. Ha hũa arvore que como

[1] Dele.

also in the sea little and hairie, but whosoeuer eateth of them dieth immediately. There be likewise certaine oisters, which they doe call Bras, the shels whereof haue so large a compasse, that they doe christen in them. In the sea also there are liuely stones, which doe grow and increase like vnto fish, whereof very good lime is made: and if they let it lie when it is taken out of the water, it looseth the strength, and it neuer burneth after. There is also a certaine tree, which beareth flowers at the sunne set, which fall down as soon as they be growne. There is a fruit also, as they say, whereof if a woman that is conceaued of child eateth, the child by and by mooueth. There is further a kinde of herbe there growing, which followeth the sunne, and remooueth after it, which is a uery strange and maruailous thing.

The flowers of Xistus and Arbortristus are such.

In the year 1512, in the moneth of Januarie, Alfonsus de Albuquerque went back from Malaca vnto Goa, and the ship wherein he went was lost, and the rest went from his companie. Simon de Andrada and a few Portugals were driuen into the Islands of Maldiua, being many and full of palme trees, and they stand lowe by the water: which staied there till they knew what was become of their gouernour. These were the first Portugals that had seen those islands,

Barros, decad. 2, lib. 7, cap. 1.

The Isles Maldiua.

---

ho sol se poẽ enflorece: & caelhe como nace: a hi fruta que dizem que como hũa prenhe a come logo moue, ha hũa erua que segue o sol de maneira que sempre anda cõ elle, & he causa de admiraçam vella.

No anno de 1512 no mes de Janeiro tornou Afonso dalboquerque de Malaca pera Goa & se perdeo a nao em q' elle hia, & outras se partiram de sua companhia, & Simão dandrade & algũs Portugueses foram ter ás ilhas de Maldiua, que sam muitas & cheas de palmeiras, & rasas cõ a agoa, aqui o retiueram ate saberem q' ho Gouernador era vindo. Estes forã os primeiros portugueses q' aq'llas ilhas viram, nas quaes dizem q' se criam cocos debaxo dagoa, que sam muy proueitosas contra toda peçonha.

wherein [it is said] there grow cocos [beneath the water] which are very good against all kinde of poison.

John de Solis.

In this yeere 1512, there went out of Castile one John de Solis, borne in Lisbon, and chief pilot vnto Don Fernando [the king]. And he hauing licence went to discouer the coast of Brassill. He tooke the like course that the Pinsons had done: he went also to[1] the Cape of S. Augustine, and went forwards to the south, coasting the shore and land [league by league] (and he came vnto the port De Lagoa);[2] and in 35 degrees of southerly latitude he found a riuer which they of Brassill call Parana-guaçu, that is, the great water. He sawe there signes of siluer, and therefore called it Rio de Plata, that is, the riuer of siluer. And it is said that at that time he went farther because he liked the countrey well; but he returned backe againe into Spaine, and made account of all things to Don Fernando, demaunding of the king the gouernment thereof, which the king granted him. Whereupon he prouided three ships, and with them in the yeere 1515 [in the month of September] he went

Rio de Plata.

Pet. Martyr, decad. 3, cap. 10.

Neste anno de 1512 partio de Castella Ioam de Soliz, natural de Lebrixa,[3] piloto mòr Del rey dom Fernando, com sua licença foy descobrir a costa do Brasil, leuou a derrota dos Pições. Tornou o cabò de Sancto Agostinho, seguio sua via contra o meio dia, costeando a ribeira & terra legoa por legoa, & em xxxv graos daltura achou hũ rio, a q' os Brasis chamã Paranagaco, q' quer dizer grãde agoa, vio nellas mostras de prata, & assi lhe pos nome Rio da prata: & dizẽ ainda q' foy mais adiante por lhe parecer bẽ a terra. Tornando a Espanha, deu de tudo a el rey dõ Fernando conta, & pediolhe aq'lla gouernança, el rey lhe fez merce della, Armou em Lepe[4] tres nauios, & no ãno de 1515 & mes de Setẽbro tornou a este reino, onde o matarã, estes Solizes pições forã grãdes descobridores naq'las partes, ate gastarem nisso vida & fazenda.

---

[1] He doubled. [2] Not in Portuguese. [3] Lisboa? [4] (?)

againe into that kingdome; but he was there slaine. These [gallant] Solisses were great discouerers in those partes, and spent therein their liues and goods.

In the same yeere, 1512, John Ponce of Leon, which had beene gouernour of the Isle of S. John, armed two ships and went to seeke the Isle of Boyuca, where the naturals of the countrey reported to be a wel, which maketh old men young. Whereupon he laboured to finde it out, and was in searching of it the space of six monethes, but could finde no such thing. He entred into the Isle of Bimini, and discouered a point of the firme land standing in 25 degrees towards the north, vpon Easter day, and therefore he named it Florida. And because the land seemed to yeeld gold and siluer and great riches, he begged it of the king, Don Fernando, but he died in the discouerie of it, as many more haue done.

Pet. Martyr, decad. 2, cap. 10. Gomara historiæ general, lib. 2, cap. 10. Bimini Islands. Florida. Martyr. decad. 3, cap. 10.

In the yeere 1513 Vasco Nunnes de Valboa hearing speech and newes of the South Sea, determined to goe thither, although his company dissuaded him from that action.[1] But being a man of good valure, with those soldiers

Pet. Martyr, decad. 3, cap. 1.

Neste mesmo āno de 1512 Ioam ponso de Liā q' foy gouernador da ylha de S. Ioā, armou dous nauios, & foy buscar a ilha Boihuca, onde diziā os da terra q' estaua hūa fonte q' sua agoa tornaua os velhas moços, & andou em sua busca seis meses cō assaz trabalho sem achar de la noua, nē q' visse tal cousa, entrou ē Bemini, & descobrio aqlla ponta de terra firme q' está em xxv graos da parte do norte dia de pascoa florida, & por ysso lhe pos o tal nome, & por lhe parecer q' acharia nella ouro, prata, & grāde riq'za, a pedio a el rey dō Fernādo, q' foy causa de sua morte & dano, como muitos na tal empresa tē recibido.

No anno de 1513 tendo Vasco nunez de Valboa, noua do mar do sul, determinou passar a elle, cō quanto lhe punham medo da gente da terra, por onde auia de fazer este caminho, mas elle como

---

[1] Although his company tried to inspire him with fear of the people of that country.

that he had, being 290, he resolued to put himself into that ieopardie. He went therefore from Dariene the first day of September, carrying some Indians of the countrey with him to be his guides, and he marched ouerthwart the land, sometimes quietly, sometimes in war; and in a certaine place called Careca he found Negroes captiues with curled haire [and never up to that time were others seen or known until now, in all these parts of New Spain, Golden Castile and Peru.]

The South Sea discouered.

This Valboa came to the sight of the South Sea on the 25 day of the said moneth, and on Saint Michael's day came vnto it, where he imbarked himselfe against the will of Chiapes, who was the Lord of that coast, who wished him not to doe so, because it was very dangerous for him. But he[1] desirous to haue it knowne that he had beene vpon those seas, went forwards, and came backe againe to land in safetie, (and)[2] [He returned] with great contentment, bringing with him good store of gold, siluer, and pearles, which there they tooke. For which good seruice of his, Don

---

era esforçado & belicoso, cõ esses soldados q' tinha q' eram dozentos & nouenta, determinou de se põer neste perigo: & partio do Doriem dõde estaua. O primeiro de Setẽbro leuando algũs Indios da terra por guia, atrauessou toda a terra, ora por paz, ora por guerra, & em hũ certo senhorio q' se chama Careca, acharam negros captiuos de cabeça reuolta, q' nũca ate entam se viram, nem se sabe outros ategora em todas aq'llas partes da noua Espanha, Castella do ouro, & Peru. Ouue vista Valboa do mar do Sul a vinte cinco dias do mes, chegou a elle dia de sam Miguel, & por isso pos aq'lle golfam tal nome, embarcouse em certas barcas cõtra võtade de Chipe, q' era senhor daq'la costa, que lhe rogaua que o nã fizesse por ser perigosa, mas elle quis saber o que era & dizer que ho nauegara: tornouse assas contente, com muito ouro, prata, aljofre que se lá pescaua, por onde el Rey dom Fernando lhe fez merçe & hõra.

[1] Wished to know what it was like, and to say that he had sailed on it.
[2] Dele.

Ferdinando the king greatly fauoured and honoured him.

This year, 1513, in the moneth of Februarie, Alfonsus de Albuquerque went fro the city of Goa [by Aden] towards the Streight of Mecha with twenty ships. They arriued at the citie of Aden and battered it, and passed forward and entred into the streight. They say that they saw a crosse in the element[1] and worshipped it. They wintered in the Island of Camaran. This was the first Portugall captaine that gaue information of those seas, and of that of Persia, being things in the world of great account.

Barros, decad. 2, lib. 7, cap. 7.

The streight of Mecha or of the Red Sea discouered.

The Isle of Camaram.

In the yeere 1514, and in the moneth of May, there went out of Saint Lucar one Pedro Arias de Auila, at the commandement of Don Ferdinando. He was the fourth gouernour of Castillia del Oro or Golden Castile, for so they named the countreyes of Dariene, Carthagena, and Vraba, and that countrey which was newly conquered [and brought under government]. He carried with him his wife the Lady Elizabeth[2] and 1500 men in seuen ships; and the king appointed Vasco Nunnez de Valboa gouernour of the South Sea and of that coast.

Pet. Martyr, decad. 3, cap. 5.

Neste anno & mes de Feuereiro partio Afonso dalbuquerq' da cidade de Goa pera Adẽ & estreito de Meca, com vinte vellas, chegados áquella cidade, deram lhe cõbate: & passados a diante entraram o estreito, & dizem q' viram no ceo hũa Cruz, a que todos adoraram: & na ylha de Camaram inuernaram, este foy o primeiro capitam Portugues que deu enformação daquelle mar & da Persia, cousas pelo mundo tam celebradas.

No anno de 1514 & mes de Mayo, partió de sam Lucas de Barramedo Pedraires dauilla, por mandado del Rey dom Fernãdo quarto, gouernador de Castella douro, que assi poseram nome a esta prouincia do Dariem, Cartagena, Suraba, & aquella terra que nouamẽte se conquistaua, descobria, & senhoreaua, leuou sua molher dona Isabel sete naos mil & quinhẽtos homẽs nellas, assi

[1] Heavens. [2] Isabel?

In the beginning of the yeere 1515 the gouernour, Pedro Arias de Auila, sent one Gaspar Morales with 150 men vnto the Gulfe of S. Michael to discouer the Islands of Tararequi, Chiapes, and Tumaccus. There was a casique, Valboa's friend, which[1] gaue him many canoas or boates made of one tree to row in, wherein they passed vnto the Island of pearles; the lord whereof resisted them at their comming on land. But Chiapes and Tumaccus did pacifie him in such order, that the captaine of the isle had them home vnto his house, and made much of them, and receiued baptisme at their hands, naming him Pedro Arias after the gouernour's name, and he gaue vnto them for this a basket full of pearls waying 110 pounds,[2] whereof some were as big as hasell nuts of 20, 25, 26, or 31 carats; (and euery carat is fower graines.)[3] There was giuen for one of them 1200 ducats. This Island of Tararequi standeth in 5 degrees of latitude towards the north.

The Island of Tararequi or of pearles in the South Sea. Martyr, decad. 3, cap. 10. Gomara, historiæ generall, lib. 6, cap. 2.

---

fez el Rey a Vasco nunoz de valboa adiantado do mar do sul & de toda aquella banda.

Na entrada do anno de 1515 mandou o Gouernador Pedraires dauila a Gaspar de morales cõ cento & cinquenta homẽs ao golfão de sam Miguel buscar a ylha de Tararequi, Chiapi, & Tumugoa, Casiquas amigos de Valboa, lhe derã muitas conoas q' sam barcos de remo, com q' passaram a ylha das perolas, o senhor de la lhe defendeo a desembarcaçam, mas Chiapi & Tumaco os concertaram de maneira, que ho capitão da ylha hos leuou a sua casa, & lhe fez bom gasalhado, & tomou agoa de baptismo, pos se nome Pedraires como o Gouernador, & lhe deu pera elle hum cesto de perolas q' pesara cem marcos, em que entraua algũas dellas como auelãas, & tinham vinte & cinco, & vinte & seis, & trinta quilates, & deuse por esta mil & dozentos castelhanos: esta ylha de Taraquerj está em cinco graos daltura da parte do norte.

---

[1] Chiapi and Tumagoa, caciques and friends of Valboa.

[2] 100 marcs. The marc was eight ounces.

[3] Not in Portuguese.

In this yeere 1515, in the moneth of March, the gouernour sent one Gonsaluo de Badaios with 80 soldiers to discouer new lands, and they went from Dariene to Nombre de Dios, where came vnto them one Lewis de Mercado with fiftie men more, which the gouernour sent to aide him. They determined to discouer toward the south, saying that that countrey was the richest. They tooke with them Indians to be their guides, and going along the coasts they found slaues marked with irons as the Portugals doe vse; and hauing marched a good way through the countreyes with great trauaile they gathered together much golde and fortie slaues to do them seruice: but one Casique, named Periza, did set vpon them and[1] slue and tooke the most part of them. Pet. Martyr, decad. 3, cap. 10.

The gouernour hearing of these newes, the same yeere 1515, sent foorth his sonne, John Arias de Auila, to be reuenged and to discouer also by sea and by land. They went westward to Cape de Guerra, standing in little more than Cape de Guerra.

Neste mesmo anno de 1515 & mes de Março mandou o gouernador descobrir terra a Gonçalo de Badajoz, & deulhe oitenta soldados, partiram de Dariem, & foram a Nombre de Dios, onde chegou a elles Luis de mercado cõ cinquẽta homes mais q' o Gouernador mandaua. Em sua ajuda assentarã descobrir da parte do Sul, por dizerem q' era terra mais rica, tomaram Indios por guias, foram ao longo daquella costa, onde viram escrauos ferrados, como nós acostumamos, depois de passarem assaz terras, & trabalhos, ajuntarã muito ouro & quarenta escrauos pera seu seruiço, o Casique palisa deu sobre elles, & tomou lhes tudo.

Sabẽdo ho gouernador esta noua no mesmo anno de 1515 mandou a vingar por seu filho Ioã ayres Dauila, & descobrir por mar & costa, (ho alcayde Gaspar despinosa, q' era passagem muy freq'ntada do Peru & Nicaraga,)[2] daqui forã ao Ponẽte ao cabo da guerra, q' está em pouco mais de seis graos da parte do norte, &

[1] Took them all. [2] This line appears to be interpolated by mistake.

sixe degrees towards the north, and from thence vnto Punta de Borica, and to Cape Blanco or the White Cape, standing in 8 degrees and an halfe; they discouered 250 leagues as they affirme, and peopled the citie of Panama.

Punta de Borica.
Cape Blanco.
Panama peopled.

In this very yeere 1515, in the moneth of May, Alfonsus de Albuquerque, gouernour of India, sent from the citie of Ormuz one Fernando Gomes de Lemos as ambassadour vnto Xec or Shaugh Ismael, king of Persia: and it is declared that they trauailed in it 300 leagues, and that it is a pleasant countrey like vnto France. This Xec or Shaugh Ismael went on hunting and fishing for troutes, whereof there are many. And there be the fairest women in all the world. And so Alexander the Great affirmed when he called them the women with golden eies. (And this yeere this woorthy viceroy Alfonsus de Albuquerque died.)[1]

Barros, decad. 2, lib. 10, cap. 5. Osorius, lib. 10, pag. 277. An ambassage to Ismael king of Persia.

In the yeere 1516, and one hundred yeeres after the taking of Ceuta in Barbarie, Lopez Suares being gouernour of India, there was a dispatch made by the commandement of the king's highnes vnto one Fernando Perez de Andrada

---

dahi à ponta de Borica, & o cabo braço q' esta ẽ oito graos & meo, descobrirão dozentas & cincoenta legoas, segundo elles deziam, & pouvaram a cidade de Penama.

No ãno mesmo de 1515 & mes de Mayo mãdou Afõso Dalbuq'rq' gouernador da India, da cidade Dormuz Fernã gomez de lemos cõ embaixada ao Xequismael senhor da Persia, & dize q' atrauessaram por ella trezẽtas legoas, & q' he hũa bella França, o Xequismael andaua à caça & pescaria de trutas q' hahi muitas, & as mais fermosas molheres da redondeza, & assi o aproua ho grande Alexandre quando dezia por ellas que as Persianas eram dor dos olhos.

No anno de 1516 & cem anos depois da tomada de Cepta, gouernando Lopo soarez a India, despachou por mandado de S. A. Fernã perez dandrade p'a a grã prouincia da China partio da cidade

---

[1] Not in Portuguese.

to passe to the great countrey and kingdome of China. He went from the citie of Cochin in the moneth of Aprill. They[1] received pepper, being the principal marchandise to be sold in all China of any value. And he was farther commanded by the king, Don Emmanuel, to goe also to Bengala with his letter and dispatch to a knight called John Coelo. This was the first Portugall, as farre as I know, which drunke of the water of the riuer Ganges.

Pepper a principall marchandise in China.

This yeere, 1516, died Don Fernando, king of Spaine.

The death of Fernando, king of Spaine.

In the yeere 1517, this Fernando Perez went vnto the citie of Malacha, and in the moneth of July he departed from thence towards China with eight sailes, fower Portugals, and the others Malayans. He arriued in China:[2] and because he could not come on land without an ambassage, there was one Thomas Perez which had order for it: and he went from the citie of Canton, where they came to an anker: they went by land fower hundred leagues, and came vnto the citie of *Pekin, where the king was, for this prouince and countrey is the biggest that is in the worlde. It be-

Osorius, lib. ii, foi, 312.

China discouered.

Canton.

---

de Cochim no mes Dabril, & esteue na ylha de Samatra, & cidade de Pacem, tomando a pimenta, por ser a principal mercadoria q' na China tem valia, & mandou daqui a el rey dõ Manoel q' tambẽ fosse a Bengala cõ sua carta & recado a hũ caualeiro q' se chamaua Ioam coelho. Este foy o primeiro Portugues q' eu saiba q' bebeo agoa do rio Gange. E neste anno de 1516 faleceo el rey dõ Fernando de castella.

No anno de 1517, foy Fernã perez ter á cidade de Malaca, & no mes de Iulho partio della p'a a China cõ oito vellas, q'tro portuguesas, & as outras malayas. Chegado aa China, como nã pode entrar nella sem embaxada, leuaua ja hũ Tome pirez pera isso. E partio da cidade de Cantam, onde elles surgirã, foy por terra quatrocentas legoas, que era a cidade de Pequim, onde el rey estaua,

---

[1] They took in a cargo of pepper at the city of Pacem in Sumatra.

[2] Taken with him for that purpose.

* Or Pakin.

ginneth at Sailana, in [19 or] 20 degrees of latitude towards the north, and it endeth almost in fifty degrees. Which must be 500 leagues in length: they say that it containeth 300 leagues in bredth. Fernando Perez was 14 moneths in the Isle da Veniaga, learning as much as he could of the [affairs of that country] countrey, according as the king, his master, had commanded him [they being great and remarkable]. And although one Raphael Perestrello had beene there in a junke or barke of certaine marchants of Malaca, yet vnto Fernando Perez there ought to be giuen the praise of this discouerie: as well for that he had commandement from the king, as in discouering so much with [his fleet, and to] Thomas Perez by land, and George Mascarenhas by sea, and for coasting vnto the citie of Foquiem, standing in 24 degrees of latitude.

Illha da Veniaga or Tama according to Osorius.

Foquiem.

In this same yeere, 1517, Charles, which afterward was Emperour, came into Spaine, and tooke possession thereof. And in the same yeere Francis Fernandes de Cordoua, Christopher Morantes, and Lopez Ochoa, armed three ships, at their owne proper charges, from the Island of Cuba.

The comming of Charles the fift into Spaine. Gomar., hist. gen., lib. 3, cap. 2.

---

porque esta prouincia he a mayor que se agora sabe no mũdo. Começa dezanoue & xx. graos daltura da parte do norte, & diz q' acaba perto de cincõeta graos ẽ q' auera 500 legoas de cõprido, & q'rẽ q' tenhã de largo 300. & estue Fernão pẽz. xiiij. meses ẽ hũa ylha q' se chama Daueniaga, enformandose das cousas daquella terra como lhe el Rey mandaua, por serem muy grãdes & notaueis, & ainda que ja la fora Raphael perestrelo, em hum junco de mercadores de Malaca, a Fernam Perez se deue dar a palma deste descobrimento, assi por ser por el Rey mandado, como por descobrir tanto cõ armada e Thome pirez por terra & Iorge mascarenhas por mar & costa atè a cidade de Foquiem, que esta em 24 graos daltura.

Neste mesmo anno de 1517, veyo o emperador dom Carlos a Espanha tomar posse della. No anno mesmo armou Francisco fernãdez de Cordoua, Christouam morãte, & Lopo ochea tres nauios

They had also with them a barke of Diego Velasques, who then was gouernor. They came on land in Jucatan, stand- Jucatan.
ing in 20 degrees of latitude, at a point which they called Punta de las Duennas; that is to say, The point of Ladies, which was the first place wherein they had seen temples and buildings of lime and stone. The people here goe better apparelled then in any other place. They haue crosses which they worship, setting them vpon their tombes when they be buried. Wherby it seemeth that in times past they had in that place the faith of Christ among them. And some say that thereabouts were the seven Cities. They The Seuen cities.
went round about it towards the north, which is on the right hand: from whence they turned backe vnto the Island of Cuba with some examples of gold, and men which they had taken. And this was the first beginning of the discouerie of New Spaine.

In the yeere 1518, Lopez Suares commanded Don John Castigneda, lib. 4, cap. 36, and 3, 7. Osorius, lib. ii, fol. 315, pag. 2.
de Silueira to goe to the Islands of Maldiua [and kingdom of Bengal]: and he made peace with them [of the islands]: and from thence he went to the citie of Chatigam, situated Chatigam in Bengala.

à sua custa da ylha da Cuba, leuarã mais hũa barca de Diogo velhasquez que ja gouernaua, q' meteo nesta armada, forão tomar terra em Hiucatas, em vinte graos daltura, em hũa ponta que poseram nome das molheres, q' foy a primeira em que se viram templos & edeficios de cal & pedra. He gẽte milhor atauiada que ha em neuhũa outra terra, & cruzes em q' os Indios adorauam, & os punham sobre seus defuntos quando faleciam, donde parecia que em algum tẽpo se sentio aly a fe de Christo, por onde algũs quiseram dizer q' fossẽ ali as sete cidades, andarã derredor della da parte do norte, que he da mão dereita, dõde se tornaram a ylha Cuba cõ algũas mostras douro & hõmes que tomaram, & este foy o começo do descobrimento da noua Espanha.

No anno de 1518, mandou Lopo soarez dõ Ioam da silueira ás ylhas de Maldiua & reyno de Bengala, nas ilhas assentou pazes com os moradores dellas, & dahi foy a cidade de Chatigam, que

on the mouth of the riuer Ganges, vnder the tropicke of Cancer. For this riuer, and the riuer Indus, which standeth an hundred leagues beyond the citie of Diu, and that of Canton in China, doe all fall into the sea vnder one parallele or latitude. And although before that time Fernan Perez had [been][1] commanded [Coelho] to goe to Bengala [as has been said], yet notwithstanding John de Silueira ought to beare away the commendation of this discouerie; because he went as captaine generall, and remained there longest, learning the commodities of the countrey, and manners of the people.

Pet. Martyr, decad. 4, cap. 3. Gomar., hist. gen., lib. 2, cap. 14, and cap. 17.

In the said yeere 1518, the first day of May, Diego Velasques, gouernour of the Island of Cuba, sent his nephew, John de Grisalua, with fower ships and two hundred soldiers, to discouer the land of Jucatan. And they founde in their way the Island *Cosumel standing towards the north in 19 degrees, and named it Santa Cruz, because they came to it the third of May. They coasted the land lying vpon the left hand of the gulfe, and came to an Island called

---

esta situada na boca do rio Gãje no tropico de Cãcro porque assi este Rio como o Indo que he çem legoas alẽ da cidade de Dio, & o de Cantam, na China todos desembarcam num paralelo, mar & terra, & ainda que ja neste tempo tiuesse Fernam perez mandado a Bẽgala o Coelho (como he dito) com tudo dom Ioão da silueira deue de leuar a palma deste descobrimento, por hir por capitam mõr, & estar la mais tempo enformãdose da terra & dos costumes dos principaes della.

No anno de 1518, o primeiro dia do mes de Mayo mandou o gouernador Diogo velhasq'z que na ilha Cuba estaua, seu sobrinho Ioam de gũjaluarez com quatro nauios & dozentos soldados ao descobrimẽto da terra de Hiucatam, & tomaram de caminho a ilha de Cuximel, q' está da parte do norte en dezanoue graos, & poseram lhe nome santa Cruz, por estarem nella aquelle dia, costearam esta costa à mão esquerda per hũa enseada que poseram nome Dasce-

[1] Dele. * Or Acuzamil.

Ascension, because they came vnto it vpon Ascension Day. They went vnto the end of it, standing in 16 degrees of latitude; from whence they came backe because they could finde no place to goe out at; and from hence they went round about it to another riuer, which they called the riuer of Grisalua, standing in 17 degrees of latitude; the people thereabout troubled them sore, yet notwithstanding they brought from thence some gold, siluer, and feathers, being there in great estimation, and so they turned backe againe to the Island of Cuba.

The Isle of Ascension.

The Bay of Hunduras.

Rio de Grisalua.

In the same yeere, 1518, one Francis Garay armed three ships in the Isle of Jamaica at his owne charges, and went towards the point of Florida standing in 25 degrees towards the north, seeming to them to be an island most pleasant, thinking it better to people islands then the firme land, because they could best conquere them and keepe them. They went there on land, but the people of Florida killed many of them, so that they durst not inhabite it. So they sailed along the coast and came vnto the riuer of Panuco, standing 500 leagues from the point of Florida in sailing along the

Gomar., hist., gen., lib. 2, cap. 12, and 61.

Panuco.

çam por la entrarem em festata manha. Foram ate a fim dela, que esta em dezaseis graos daltura, donde se tornaram por nam acharem saida: & daquy forão derredor della a outro rio que poseram nome de Gūjaluarez, q' está em dezasete graos daltura, & os della os feriram & maltratarā, com tudo trouxeram algum ouro, prata, penachos, que sam la muy estimados, & com isto se tornaram aa ylha da Cuba.

E no mesmo anno de 1518, armou Francisco garai tres nauios na ilha Jamaica á sua depesa: foy atentar a ponta da Florida q' està em vinte cinco graos da parte do norte, parecendolhes que seria ilha q' naquelle tempo mais folgauão de as descobrirem q' terra firme, porq' a podiā milhor conquistar, senhorear, & conservar: sairam em terra, os della lhe feriram & mataram muita gēte polo q' nam ousaram pouoala, & foram se ao lōgo da costa, chegarā ao Rio de Panuco, q' sam 500 legoas da pōta da Florida, nā nos deixarā

coast; but the people resisted them in euery place. Many of them also were killed in Chila, whom the saueges flaied and eate, hanging vp their skinnes in their temples in memoriall of their valiantnes. Notwithstanding all this, Francis de Garay went[1] thither, [and] the next yeere [sent], and begged the gouerment of that countrey of the emperour, because he sawe in it some shew of gold and silver.[2]

Pet. Martyr, decad. 4, cap. 6.

In the yeere 1519, in the moneth of Februarie, Fernando Cortes went from the Island of Cuba to the land which is called Noua Spania, with eleven ships and 550 Spanyards in them. The first place where he went on land was the Island of Cosumel [or Santa Cruz], where they immediately destroied all the idols, and set crosses on the altars and the images of the Virgine Marie [which all worshipped]. From this island they went and arriued on the firme land of Jucatan, at the point De las Duennas, or the point of Ladies, and went thence to the riuer of Tanasco, and set vpon a citie fast by, called Potoncian, enuironed with wood, and the houses were built with lime and stone, and couered with

Gomar., hist. gen., lib. 2, cap. 18, &c.

Tauasco.

Potoncian now called Victoria.

---

resgatar, nẽ conservar em nenhũa parte: mas autes em Chily lhe ferirã & matarã gẽte, & os esfolarã & comerã, & poserã as pelles no templo & sacrificio por memoria de sua valẽtia. Cõ tudo tornou lá Francisco de Garai, & o ãno seguĩte mãdou ao emp'ador pedir a gouernança daquella terra, por lhe parecer rica de ouro & prata.

No ãno de 1519 em Feuereiro partio Fernã cortez da ylha da Cuba, por a terra a q' elle pos nome noua Espanha cõ xj vellas & 550 Espanhoes nellas, & a primcira terra q' tomarã foy a terra de Coxomil, ou S. cruz, onde logo destruyrã todo los ydolos, poserã cruzes nos altares, & imagẽs de nossa sñora, a q' todos adorauã. Desta ylha tomarã a terra firme de Jiucatã na ponta das molheres, ao rio de Tauasco, & derã nũa cidade q' está nelle, q' se chama Potochã cercada de madeira, & as casas de cal & pedra, cubertas de ladrilho: pelejaram cõ grãde aperto, aparaceolhes o señor Santiago

[1] Returned. [2] Because it appeared to him rich in gold and silver.

tile: they fought there egarly; and there appeered vnto them S. James on horsebacke, which increased their courage. They called that citie Victoria; and they were the first people which were subdued to the Spanyards' obedience in all Newe Spaine. From hence they went discouering the coast till they came vnto a place named S. John d'Vllhua, distant, as they said, from Mexico, where the king of Muteçuma was, sixty or seventy leagues: and there was a seruant of his that gouerned that prouince, named Tendilli, which gaue them good entertainment, although they vnderstood not one another. But Cortes had twenty women,[1] whereof one was called Marine, borne in that countrey: they were the first that were baptized in New Spaine. And from that time forward Marine and Aguilar served as interpreters. Tendilli presently gaue knowledge of this vnto Muteçuma, that a kinde of bearded people were arriued in his countrey; for so they called the Castillians. But he was troubled vpon that newes: for his gods (which are to be thought to be diuels), had told him, that such people as the Spanyards

St. John de Vllhua.

encima dũ caualo, q' lhes dobrou o esforço, & poseram nome a esta cidade a Vitoria, foram os primeiros vassallos q' o Emperador teue na noua Espanha.

Daqui forã pela costa descobrindo ate onde se chama S. Ioã dalua, dõde dizẽ q' auera de Mexico, 60 ou 70 legoas onde estaua el rey Matacumací, & gouernaua por elle hũ seu criado q' se chamaua Teudali, q' lhe fez bõ gasalhado, inda q' senã entenderã senã leuara Fernã cortez xx molheres, & hũa dellas q' se chamaua Marina, era de dẽtro da q'la terra. Fora as primeiras q' receberã agoa de batismo na noua Espana, & dali por diante Marina, & Aguilar seruiram de lingoa: & logo Thedelim fez a saber a Matecuma como a gente Barbada, q' assi chamauam aos Castelhanos, era ali aportada, de que lhe pesou muito, por lhe terem dito os seus deoses que os tais homẽs como aquelles auiam de destruir

[1] Although they would not have understood each other, but that Cortez had with him twenty women, etc.

were should destroy his law and countrey, and be Lords thereof. And therefore he sent gifts vnto Cortes, in value twenty thousand ducats, but would not come to him.

Because S. John de Vllhua was then no place for a nauie to ride in, Cortes sent Francis de Monteio, and the pilot Antonie Alaminos, in two brigadines to discouer that coast, who came to a[1] place where they might ride without danger. They came to Panuco, standing in 23[2] degrees northward: from whence they came backe vpon an agreement to goe vnto Culuacan, being an hauen of more safetie. They set saile [and went westward], but Cortes went by land westward with the most part of his men on horsebacke, and they came vnto a citie called Zempoallan, where they were well receiued. And from thence he went to another towne called Chianitzlan, with the lord of which towne, as with all the countrey besides, he made league to be against Muteçuma. And when he knew that his ships were come, he went vnto them, and there builded a towne, and called it Villa rica de la vera cruz. From whence he sent vnto Charles the empe-

Gomara, historiæ gener., lib. 2, cap. 21, 22, 23, 24.

Zempoallan.

Chianitzlan.

Villa rica de la vera Cruz.

---

sua ley, & terra, & seuhoreala, & por ysso mandou peças a Fernam cortez q' valiam vinte mil cruzados, escusando se de se ver com elle.

Como sam Iohão dalua nam era porto pera estar a armada, mandou Fernam cortez a Francisco de Montejo, & ao piloto Antam de Laminos em dous bargantīs, q' descobrissem aquela costa ate topar sitio onde podesem estar sem perigo. Foram ate Panuco q' está da parte do norte em xxij graos daltura, dōde se tornaram cō acordo se passarse a Culuacā, q' he porto de milhar abrigo. E dada á vella se partiram contra o Ponente, & Cortez por terra com a mais da gente & caualos, & chegaram a hūa cidade q' se chama Leopolão, foy bem recebido. E dahi a outra q' se chama Chesuilam, & com estes & toda a comarca assentou liga contra Matecuma, & sabendo que as naos eram chegadas, foyse a ellas, & fundon ali

---

[1] And find a place.

[2] 22 ?

rour a present [and his fifths], and made report of all that he had done, and how he determined to goe to Mexico, and to visite Muteçuma: and besought the emperour to giue him the gouernment of that countrey. And because his people should not rise in mutinie, as they began, he destroied all his ships.

Cortez presently went from Villa rica de la vera Cruz, leauing there 150 Spanish horsemen,[1] and many Indians to serue them; and the villages round about (became)[2] his friends [and allies]. He went vnto the citie of [Heopolam, now called Zeopolam] Zempoallan: there he heard news that Francis Garay was on the coast with fower ships to come on land:[3] and by subtiltie he got nine of his men; of whom he vnderstood, that Garay had beene in Florida, and came vnto the riuer Panuco, where he got some golde, determining to stay there in a towne which is now called Almeria.

Gomara, historiæ generall. lib. 2, cap. 61.

Cortez ouerthrew the idols in Zempoallan, and the tombes of their kings, whome they worshipped as gods, and tolde

Gomar., hist. gen., lib. 2. cap. 25.

---

hũa villa, a q' pos nome Rica de vera cruz, donde maudou ao Emperador presente & seus quintos, & darem lhe conta do que passaua, & como determinaua dhir a Mexico a ver se com Mantacumacim, q' lhe fizesse merce da gouernaça, & por se nã amotinar agẽte, como ja começaua, deu cos nauios á costa.

Partio logo Fernam cortez da villa Rica da vera Cruz, deixando nella cento & cincoenta castelhanos, dous caualos, & muitos Indios de seruiço, & pouos derredor, seus amigos & aliados. E elle se foy à cidade de Heopolam, que se agora chama Zeopolam, onde lhe deram noua q' audaua pella costa Francisco de Garai, com quatro nauios pera tomar terra, & per manhas & cilladas ouue delles noue homẽs, de q̃ soube como Garai fora aa Florida, & tocara o rio Pamuco, onde resgatara ouro, cõ tudo leuaua determinado de se assentar, onde se agora chama Almeria.

Cortez em Zeopolam fez derribar os ydolos & os sepulchros dos

[1] 150 Spaniards, two horses, and etc.

[2] Not in Portuguese.

[3] Seeking to land.

them that they were to worship the true God. From thence he went toward Mexico the 16 day of August 1519, and trauailed three daies iourney [without guides] and came to
Zalapan. Sicuchimatl. the citie of Zalapan, and to another beyond it named Sicuchimatl, where they were well receiued, and offered to be conducted to Mexico, because Muteçuma had giuen such commandement. Beyond this place he passed with his companie a certaine hill of three leagues high,[1] wherein there were vines. (In another place they found aboue a thousand loades of wood ready cut);[2] and beyond they met with a plaine countrey, and in going through the same, he named it Nombre de Dios. At the bottome of the mountaine he rested in a towne called Teubixuacan, and from thence they went through a desolate countrey, and so came to another mountaine that was very colde and full of snow, and they
Zaclotan. lay in a towne named Zaclotan. And so from towne to towne they were well receiued and feasted until they came
Tlaxcallan. into another realme named Tlaxcallan, which waged warre against Muteçuma, and being valiant they skirmished with

---

senhores, q' tambem reuerenciauam como a deoses, & adorar ao Senhor de tudo, partio pera Mexico a xvj Dagosto, caminharam tres jornados sem guias, chegaram a cidade de Colopam, & outra mais adiante que se chama Sepochimaco, donde foram bem recebidos, & se offereceram de os leuarem a Mexico, por o Matacuma ter assi mandado.

Passado hũas serras de tres legoas, em q' auia aruores cõ mil parreiras duuas, & da outra banda era a terra chãa, & ao passo desta terra por ser a primeira poseram lhe nome Nõbre de Dios, & no fundo de serra se aposeutarão em hũa villa que se chama Tenixuacam, & daly andaram tres dias por terra despouada, & forã ter a outro serra muy fria & neuada, & pousarão em hũa vila que se diz Zacotam, & dũ lugar em outro foram bẽ recebidos & agasalhados, ate entrarem em o reyno de Trascalam, que tinha guerra com

---

[1] Three leagues of hills were passed, where there were trees and thousands of grape vines.

[2] Dele.

Cortes; but in the end they agreed and entred into league with him against the Mexicans; and so they went from countrey to countrey till they came within sight of Mexico. The king Muteçuma fearing them, gaue them good entertainment, with lodging and all things necessarie: and they were with this for a time contented: but mistrusting that he and his should be slaine, he tooke Muteçuma prisoner, and brought him to his lodging with good garde. Cortes (demanded how farre his realme did extend, and sought to know the mines of gold and siluer that were in it, and how many kings, neighbours to Muteçuma, dwelled therein, requiring certaine Indians to be informed thereof, whereof he had eight prouided):[1] and he [Cortes] ioined to them eight Spanyards, and sent them two and two into fower countreyes, namely, into Zuçolla, Malinaltepec, Tenich, and Tututepec. They which went vnto Zuçolla went 80 leagues:

Muteçuma prisoner.

Zuçolla. Malinaltepec. Zenich. Tututepec.

Matacuma. E como presumiam de valentes, pelejaram cõ Fernam Cortez & suas gentes: & por fim de tudo ficaram amigos & aliados contra os Mexicanos. E assi forã de terra em terra, & pouco em pouco descobrindo ate a cidade de Mexico. El rey de Matacuma como os temia fez lhe bõ gasalhado, mãdandoos aposentar & darlhe todo o necessario: estiuerã assi algũs dias cõtentes. Mas como Fernam cortez se arreceasse de os matarem, prendeo a Matacuma & leuouo a sua casa & o pos a bom recado.

Desejou Fernam cortez saber camanho este reyno era contra o ocidente, & o mar gue chamam do sul, & as minas d'ouro & prata q' nella auia, & os Reys vezinhos que contra aquella parte Matacuma tinha, pera que pedio que lhe dessem algũs Indios q' soubessem dar disso boa conta, elle mandou logo fazer prestes oyto, & Cortez outros tãtos Espanhoes, & de dous em dous se foram a quatro prouincias que sam, Zocalam, Malinaltepec, Tenih, Tutipec. Os que foram a Zocalam andarã oytẽta legoas que ha de Mexico a

[1] Dele. Desired to learn the extent of this kingdom towards the west, and how far it was to the South Sea, he therefore begged Montezuma to provide some Indians who might be able to give this information, and he immediately ordered eight to be got ready.

for so much it was from Mexico thither. They which went to Malinaltepec went 70[1] leagues, seeing goodly countries, and brought examples of gold, which the naturals of the countrey tooke out of great riuers :[2] and all this prouince belonged vnto Muteçuma.

The countrey of Tenich and vp the river were not subiect to Muteçuma, but had warre with him, and would not suffer the Mexicans to enter into their territorie [but gave them samples of gold taken from the river]. They sent ambassadors vnto Cortes with presents, offering him their estates, and amitie, whereof Muteçuma was nothing glad. They which went to Tututepec, standing neere the South sea, did also bring with them examples of gold, and praised the pleasantnes of the countrey [as a dwelling place], (and the multitude of good harbours vpon that coast, shewing)[3] [Montezuma ordered that houses should be built for the Spaniards. Cortez inquired of him whether on the sea coast there were any harbours in which ships could lie securely. He replied that he did not know, but would ask : and he shewed] to Cortez a cloth of cotton wooll all wouen with goodly workes,

---

elle, & os q' foram a Malinaltepec, andaram setecentas, viram boa terra, & trouxerão mostras d'ouro, que os naturaes tiram dũ gram rio q' passa por ella, tudo isto he da Matacuma.

Tenis & Epolo rio acima, nam obedecião a Matacuma, mas antes tinham com elle guerra, & nam deixarã entrar os Mexicanos, & deranlhes mostras douro que no rio tiraram, & mandaram embaixadores a Fernam Cortez cõ presentes, offerecendolhe seu estado & amizade, de que Matacuma nam folgou nada. Os que foram a Tutipec, que está jũto do mar, tambẽ trouxeram mostras douro, dizendo que a terra era boa pera fazer nella assento. Matacuma mandou logo fazer casas & aposentos pera os Castelhanos estarem nellas. Pergũtoulhe Fernam Cortez se naquella costa do mar auia portos em que podessem as naos estar seguras, disse que nam sabia, mas que logo pergũtaria, & amostroulhe hum pano dalgodão

[1] 700 ? [2] A great river which flowed through it. [3] Dele.

wherein all the coast with the hauens and creekes were set foorth. But this thing then (could not be prosecuted)[1] by reason of the comming of Pamphilus de Naruaez into the countrey, who set all the kingdome of Mexico in an vprore. Gomara, hist. gen., lib. 2, cap. 48. Pamphilus de Naruaez.

In this yeere 1519, the tenth day of August, one Fernande de Magallanes departed from Siuill with fiue ships toward the Islands of Maluco: he went along the coast of Brasill till he came vnto the riuer of Plate, which the Castillians had before discouered. From thence therefore he began his discouerie, and came vnto an hauen which he called The Porte of Saint Julian, standing in 49 degrees, and there he entred and wintred: they endured much cold by reason of snow and ice: the people of that countrey they found to be of great stature, and of great strength, taking men by the legs and renting them in the middest as easily as one of vs will rend an hen: they live by fruits and hunting. They called them Patagones, but the Brasilians doe call them Morcas. Gomara, hist. gen., lib. 4, cap. 2. The discouerie of Magallanes from the riuer of Plate forward. Palagones.

---

todo texido de debuxo, em questaua toda a costa, portos & enseadas, esta obra polla vinda de Pamphilo de Narbais & reuoltas de Mexico.

Neste mesmo anno de 1519 a dez de Agosto partio Fernam de magalhães de Seuilla com cinco vellas pera as ilhas de Maluco, foy costeando a costa do Brazil ate ho Rio da Prata, que era ja descuberto por parte de Castella, da qui por diãte fez o Magalhães seu descobrimento, & chegado a hum rio que pos nome de sam Juliam que està em corenta & noue graos, meteose dentro, onde enuernaram, passaram grande frio pollas neues & geadas que avia muitas: os homẽs daquella terra dizem q' sam de grande estatura & força, & que tomão outro qualquer pellas pernas & quebram pello meio como se fosse hũa galinha, mantẽse de caça & fruta, poseran lhe nome os Patagones, & os Brazis, lhe chamão Morcas.

---

[1] Not in Portuguese, but necessary to make sense.

In the yeere 1520, in the beginning of the moneth of September, growing then somewhat temperate, they went out of the port and riuer of St. Julian, having lost in it one of their ships, and with the other fower he came vnto the streights named after the name of Magallanes standing in 52 degrees and a halfe. From thence one of the ships returned backe vnto Castile, whereof was captaine and pilot one Stephen de Porto, a Portugall, and the other three went forward, entring into a mightie sea called Pacificum, without seeing any inhabited land till they came in 13 degrees towards the north of the Equinoctiall: in which latitude they came vnto islands which they called Los Jardines, and from thence they sailed to the Archipelagus of S. Lazarus, and in one of the islands called [Sebu, the principal island] Matan[1] Magallanes was slaine, and his ship was burnt, and the other two went vnto Borneo, and so from place to place they went backe vntill they came to the Islands of Malucos, leauing many others discouered, which I rehearse not,[2] because I finde not this voiage exactly written.

Los Jardines.

Gomara, hist. gen., lib. 4, cap. 3.

Pet. Martyr, decad. 5, cap. 7.

No anno de 1520 & entrada do mes de Setembro, que começa o veram naquella terra, sairam do rio tendo ja hum nauio perdido, com os quatro chegaram ao estreito que chamão do Magalhães, que està em cincõeta & dous graos & meio, donde se tornou hũa nao pera Castella, de que era capitam & piloto Esteuão gomez do porto Portugues, com as tres forão seu caminho por hũ grande mar ermo, a q' chamaram pacifico, sem verẽ terra nẽ ilha pouoada ate treze graos daltura da parte do norte, que fora ter ás ilhas pouoadas, a que poseram nome dos prazeres, & dahi ao Archipeligo de são Lazaro, & em hũa ylha que se diz Sebu, & nata, foy ho Magalhães morto & sua nao queymada as outras duas forã a Borneo, & dahy a Midanao & de pedra ẽ pedra ás ilhas do crauo, deixãdo outras muitas descubertas q' nã aponto, por auer muytos escritores deste caminho.

---

[1] Not in Portuguese.

[2] As many have written about them.

About this time [it is said] Pope Leo the tenth sent one Paulus Centurio as ambassadour to the great Duke of Moscouie to wish him to send into India an armie along the coast of Tartarie. And by the reasons of this ambassadour the said duke was almost persuaded vnto that action, if other inconueniences had not letted him. Gomar., lib. 4, cap. 17. Ramusius, 1 vol., fol. 374.

In this same yeere 1520, in Februarie, Diego Lopes de Sequeira, a gouernour of India, went towards the Streight of Mecha, and carried with him the ambassadour of Presbyter John, and Roderigo de Lima, who also went as ambassadour to him. They came vnto the Island of Maçua, standing in the Red sea on the side of Africa, in 17 degrees toward the north; where he set the ambassadours on land, with the Portugals that should goe with them. Peter de Couillan had beene there before, being sent thither by king John the second of Portugall: but yet Francis Aluarez gaue principall light and knowledge of that countrey. Maçua. Ramusius, 1 vol., fol. 190.

In the yeere 1520, the licenciate Lucas Vasques de Aillon and other inhabitants of S. Domingo furnished two Gomara, hist. gen., lib. 2, cap. 7.

Neste mesmo tempo dizem que o Papa Liam decimo mandou miser Paulo Sinturiam cõ embaixada ao gram duq' Moscouia ho prouocara q' enuiasse á India armada ao longo da costa da Tartaria, tais rezões lhes daua q' o mouia a isso se o nã̃o estoruara algũs incõuenientes q' auia.

Neste mesmo anno de 1520 em o mes de Feuereiro, partio Diogo lopez de Sequeira gouernador da India pera o estreito de Meca, leuã̃ do consigo o embaixador do Preste: & de Rodrigo de lima que hya tambẽ com embaixada, chegaram á ilha de Masua, que está da bãda Dafrica da parte do norte em dezasete graos, poseram os embaixadores em terra com os Portugueses que auiam de hir com elles, ainda q' ja la fora Pero de couilhãa, que el Rey dom Joham ho segundo mandara, mas com tudo Francisco Aluarez nos deu enformaçam daquella terra, pollo que escreueo della.

Neste anno de 1520 ho lecenceado vasco de Seilam, & outros vesinhos de sam Domingos, armaram dous nauios q' mandaram ás

ships, and sent them to the Isles of Lucayos to get slaves, and finding none they passed along by the firme land beyond Florida vnto certaine countreyes called Chicora[1] and Gualdapé, vnto the riuer Jordan and the Cape of Saint Helena standing in 32 degrees toward the north. They of the countrey camè downe to the sea side to see the ships, as hauing neuer before seene the like: the Spanyards went on land, where they received good entertainment, and had given vnto them such things as they lacked. But they brought[2] many of them into ther ships and then set saile and brought them away for slaves: but in the way one of their ships sunke, and the other was also in great hazard. By this newes the Licentiate Aillon, knowing the wealth of the countrey,[3] begged the gouernment thereof of the emperour, and it was giuen him: whither he went to get money to pay his debt.

Chicora.

Gualdepé.

Gomara, hist. gen., lib. 2, cap. 4, 8.

About this time Diego Velasquez, gouernour of Cuba, hearing the good successe of Cortes, and that he had begged

---

ilhas dos Lucayos tomar escrauos, & como os nam acharam, passaram à terra firme acima da Florida, onde se chama Chiapa, & Gualdapè, ou rio Jordão, & cabo de S. Elena, q' està da parte do Norte ẽ 32 graos, os da terra acodiram à praya ver os nauios, como quẽ nunca os vira, os Castelhanos saltaram em terra, onde lhes fizeram bõ gasalhado, & lhes deram de graça o necessario. Foram muitos aas naos conuidados, derã âs vellas trouxeram nos por escrauos, & no caminho se foy hũa nao ao fundo, os q' na outra escaparam passarã cõ trabalho. O Licẽceado como la visse ouro, prata, & aljofre, pedio ao Emperador aq' la gouernança, onde tornou p'a pagar o q' deuia.

Neste tempo sabendo Diogo Vasquez, q' gouernaua a Cuba, q' Cortez andaua prospero, & pedia a capitania da noua Espanha, q' elle tinha por sua, mandou la hũa armada de dezoito velas, & mil

---

[1] Chiapa.

[2] Invited.

[3] The Licentiate; as he had seen there, gold, silver, and seed pearls.

the gouernment of New Spaine, which he held to be his, he furnished out thither against Cortes 18 ships, with 1000 men and 80 horses, whereof he sent as Generall one Pamphilus de Naruaez. He came vnto the towne called Villa rica de la vera Cruz, where he tooke land, and commanded those of the countrey to receiue him as gouernour thereof. But they tooke his messenger prisoner, and sent him to Mexico, where Cortes was. Which thing being knowne of Cortes, he wrote letters vnto Naruaez not to raise any vprore in the countrey which he had discouered, offering him obedience if he had any commission from the Emperour; but he corrupted the people of the countrey with money.[1] Whereupon Cortes went from Mexico and tooke Naruaez prisoner in the towne of Zampoallan, and put out one of his eies.

Naruaez being thus taken prisoner, his armie submitted themselues to Cortes, and obeied him. Whereupon presently he dispatched 200 soldiers vnto the riuer of Garay, and he sent John Vasquez de Leon with other two hundred vnto Cosaalco, and withall sent a Spanyard with the newes of his victorie vnto Mexico. But the Indians being in the meane time risen, hurt the messenger; which being knowne to

The reuolt of the Mexicans in absence of Cortes.

homēs, & oitenta cauallos nellas, & por capitam mòr Pamphilo de Narbais, foy se aa villa Rica da vera Cruz, onde tomou terra, & mandou dizer q' o recebessem por gouernador della: prenderam os messageiros, & mandaram nos a Cortez a Mexico. Sabendo isto escreueo a Narbais q' nam amotinasse a terra que le tinha descuberta, que se elle tinha prouisam do Emperador, que lhe obedeceria, com isto dizem que lhe mandou sobornar a gente com dinheiro: sahio do Mexico, & o prendeo na villa de Sempucol, quebrando lhe hum olho.

Como Narbais foy preso, os de seu exercito se entregaram a Cortez & lhe obedeceram, despachou logo dezētos Espanhoes ao rio Garai, Joam vasquez de Liam cō outros tantos a Cofoalco, & hum Castelhano com noua de sua victoria a Mexico: mas os Indios

[1] It may be read that Cortes sent to corrupt the troops of Narvaez.

Cortes, he mustered his men, and found a thousand footemen and two hundred horsemen, with the which he went towards Mexico, where he found Peter de Aluarado and the rest which he had left there aliue and in safetie, wherewith he was greatly pleased, and Muteçuma made much of him. But yet the Mexicans ceased not, but made warre against him; and the warre grew so hot that they killed their king, Muteçuma, with a stone; and then there rose vp another king, such an one as pleased them, till such time as they might put the Spanyards out of the citie, being no more than 504 footemen and fortie horsemen. The Spanyards with great losse being driuen out of Mexico, retired themselues with much adoe to Tlaxcallan, where they were well receiued; and so they gathered together 900 Spanyards, 80 horsemen, and two hundred thousand Indians, their friends and allies: and so they went backe againe to take Mexico in the moneth of August in the yeere 1521.

Muteçuma slaine.

Gomara, hist. gen., lib. 2, cap. 50.

Cortes obtaining still more and more victories, determined to see further within the countrey; and for this purpose, in the yeere 1521, and in October, he sent out one Gonzalo de Sandoual, with 200 footemen and 35 horsemen, and certaine

Gomar., hist. gen., lib. 2, cap. 60.

---

como ja estauã aleuantados o feriram. Sabẽdo Cortez isto, fez alardo, achou mil de pè, & dozentos de caualo, com que foy a Mexico, & achou Pero Daluarado, & os que la deixara viuos & sãos, de q' teue gram contentamento. Matecuma lhe fez bom gasalhado, cõ tudo os Mexicanos nam deixarã de lhes fazer a guerra, & tam crua q' lhes mataram seu Rey Matacuma de hũa pedrada, & aleuantaram outro a elles mais aceito, ate deytarem os Castelhanos da cidade, que nam eram mais jaa de quinhentos & quatro de pe, & quarenta de cauallo, & assi desbaratados foram a Tascalam, dõde os receberão, & se fizerã noue centos Espanhoes, oitenta de cauallo, & dozentos mil Indios, amigos & aliados, tornaram a tomar Mexico no mes Dagosto, anno de 1521.

Vẽdose Fernam cortez vitorioso & pacifico determinou de descobrir pola terra dentro, & pera isso neste anno de 1521 em o mes

Indians his friends vnto Tochtepec and Coazacoalco, which had rebelled, but at length yeelded. And they discouered the countrey, and built a towne 120 leagues from Mexico, and named it Medelin, and another towne they made, naming it Santo Spirito, fower leagues from the sea vpon a riuer; and these two townes kept the whole countrey in obedience. Tochtepec Coaza-coalco.

This yeere 1521, in December, Emmanuell king of Portugall died, and after him his sonne, king John the 3, reigned. Emmanuels death. Osorius, lib. 12, fol. 366.

In the yeere 1521 there went from Maluco one of Magellans ships laden with cloues [Captain and pilot John Sebastian del Cano]: they victualled themselves in the Island of Burro [which is in 24 degrees south latitude, and passed between Vitara and Malua, which are in 8 degrees], and from thence went to Timor, which standeth in 11 degrees of southerly latitude. Beyond this Island one hundred leagues they discouered certaine Islands under the Tropic of Capricorn [and further on others. All are peopled thenceforward: nor did they see land (without inhabitants),[1] Gomara, historiæ general. lib. 4, cap. 8. Burro. Timor.

d'outubro, mandou Gonçalo de sandoual com dozentos piães & trinta & cinco de caualo & muytos Indios amigos ate Antepec, Cosoalco q' se reuelaram, os quaes renderam aquella terra, & a descobriram & fizeram hũa villa de cento & vinte legoas de Mexico q' se chama Medelim, & assi outra do Spiritu Sancto, quatro legoas do mar ao longo de hũa ribeira, com as quaes pacificaram por ali tudo.

Neste mesmo anno no mes de Dezembro faleceo el rey dom Manoel, & socedeo dom João o terceiro seu filho.

No anno de 1521 partio de Maluco hũa das naos pera Castella, em q' o Magalhães fora carregada de crauo, capitã & piloto della Joam Sebastiam del cano. Foram tomar mantimento aa ilhâ de Burro q' estaa em vinte quatro graos daltura da parte do Sul, passaram por antre Vitara & Malua, que estam em oyto graos: & dahi foram a Thimor q' estaa em onze, alẽ delle cem legoas, descobriram hũas ylhas diante outras debaxo do Tropico de Capricornio. Todas sam pouoadas daqui por diate: nam sey terra que vissem

[1] Dele.

except it might be some islet, up to the Cape of Good Hope, where it is said they took in wood and water] (one named Ende, finding the places from thenceforward peopled. Afterward passing without Samatra they met with no land till they fell with the Cape of Bona Sperança, where they tooke in fresh water and wood).[1] So they came by the Islands of Cape Verde, and from thence to Siuill, where they were notably receiued, as well for the cloues that they brought, as that they had compassed about the world.

Gomara, hist. gen., lib. 6, cap. 4.

In the yeere 1522, in Januarie, one Gilgonzales armed fower ships in the Island of Tararequi, standing in the South sea, with intent to discouer the coast of Nicaragua, and especially a streight or passage from the South sea into the North sea. And sailing along the coast he came vnto an hauen called S. Vincent, and there landed with 100 Spanyards and certaine horsemen, and went within the land 200 leagues; and he brought with him 200 [thousand] pesoes of gold [although not of fine quality], and so came backe againe to S. Vincent, where he found his pilot, Andrew Nigno, who was as far as Tecoantepec,[2] in 16 degrees to the north, and had

Tecoantepec.

---

ate o Cabo de boa esperança senam algũa ylheta sem gente: onde diz que tomaram agoa & lenha. E ao lõgo daquella costa vieram aas ylhas do Cabo verde, & dahi aa cidade de Seuilha, onde foram com grande aluoroço recebidos, assi pello crauo que traziam, como por darem hũa volta ao mundo.

No ãno de 1522 & mes de Janeiro, foram ao descobrimento de Nocaraga, & buscar o estreito que diz que passaua da outra banda, Gil gonçaluez Dauila em quatro nauios que diz q' armara na ylha de Tararequi. Yndo assi ao longo da terra, sayo em hum Porto que se chama Sam Vicente, com cem Espanhoes & certos cauallos, entrou pella terra dentro dozentas legoas, & trouxe dozentos mil pesos douro, ainda que baxo. Tornado a sam Vicente, achou ahi ho seu piloto Andre Minho, que dezia que chegara ate Teantepé,

---

[1] Dele

[2] Who said he had reached Teantepé.

sailed three hundred leagues, from whence they returned to Panama, and so (ouer land)[1] to Hispaniola. Gomara, historiæ general. lib. 6, cap. 12

In the same yeere 1522, in the moneth of Aprill, the other ship of Magallanes (called The Trinitie)[2] went from the Island of Tidoré, wherein was captaine Gonzalo Gomez de Espinosa, shaping their course toward Noua Spania: and because winde was scant they stirred toward the northeast into 16[3] degrees, where they found two islands, and named them the Isles of Saint John, and in that course they came to another island in 20 degrees, which they named La Griega, where the simple people came into their ships, of whom they kept some to shew them in Noua Spania. They were in this course fower monthes, vntill they came into 42 degrees of northerly latitude, where they did see sea fishes called seales and tunies. And the climate (seemed vnto them, comming newly out of the heat to be)[4] [was] so cold and vntemperate, that they could not well abide it, and therefore they turned backe againe to Tidoré[5] being thereunto enforced also by contrarie windes.[6] [Notwithstanding] these were the first Spanyards which had beene in so high a

Castagneda Historia delle Indie Orientali, lib. 6, cap. 41. Gomar., hist. gen., lib. 4, cap. 8 & 12.

Two Islands in 16 degrees of northerly latitude.

42 degrees of northerly latitude.

---

que estaa em dezaseys graos da parte do Norte, & nauegara trezentas legoas: dali se tornaram a Penama, onde foram aa ylha Espanhola.

Neste mesmo anno de 1522 & mes Dabril, partio a outra nao que com o Magalhães fora da ylha de Tidore, capitam della Gonçalo gomez despinosa na volta da noua Espanha, por escassear o vento, gouernaram ao Nordeste em trinta & seis graos da parte do norte, duas ilhas a que poseram nome de sam Joam, & polo mesmo rumo foram ter a outra em vinte graos, q' se chama a Grega, a gente della como innocente. se veyo meter na nao, & tomaram algũs pera leuar damostra aa noua Espanha. Forão quatro meses nesta volta, ate se poerem em quarenta & dous graos, onde viram

[1] Not in Portuguese.
[2] Not in Portuguese.
[3] Thirty-six degrees north latitude.
[4] Not in Portuguese.
[5] Maluco.
[6] By the wind failing.

latitude toward the north [on that side]. And there they found one Antonie de Britto building a fortresse (which tooke from them their goods, and sent forty-eight of them prisoners to Malaca).[1]

Gomar., hist. gen., lib. 6, cap. 12.

In this yeere 1522, Cortes desirous to haue some hauens on the South Sea, and to discouer the coast of Noua Spania on that side, whereof he had knowledge in Muteçuma his time, bicause he thought by that way to bring the drugs from Maluco and Banda, and the spicerie from Jaua, with lesse trauaile and danger, he sent fower Spaniards with their guides to Tecoantepec, Quahutemallan, and other hauens, where they were wel received, and brought some of the people with them to Mexico. And Cortes made much of them [and made them presents which contented them]; and afterwards sent ten pilots[2] thither to search the seas thereabout. They went seventy leagues in the sea,[3] but found

The South Sea first searched by Cortes his pilots.

lobos marinhos, & toninhas, & era o clima tam frio & destemperado, que se nam podia sostentar nella, pello que tornaram arribar a Maluco, com tudo forã os primeiros Espanhoes que se poseram daquela banda em tam grande altura: & quando tornaram a Maluco, acharam ja neste anno Antonio de Brito fazendo fortaleza.

Neste anno de 1522 desejoso ho Cortez ter terras & portos no mar do Sul, pera descobrir por aly a costa da noua Espanha, de que tinha noticia em vida de Matecuma: & tam bẽ lhe parecia que trazia por ali as drogas de Maluco, Banda, & especearias da Jaoa com menos trabalho & perigo, mandou la quatro Castelhanos com suas guias a Thoantepè, & a Cotomolam, & a outros portos de que foram bem recebidos, trouxeram homẽs que os guiaram a Mexico. Fernam Cortez lhes fez bom gasalhado, & deulhes peças que os contentaram. Depois disso mandou la dez pilotos & guias da terra que os leuaram aa prouincia de Teantepee, & Chicoalco, que se

[1] Not in Portuguese.

[2] And guides, that they might examine the province of Zeantepec and Chicoolto, which is now called Joam d'alua.

[3] By sea and land.

no hauen. One Cassique or Lord, called Cuchataquir, vsed them well, and sent with them to Cortes two hundred of his men with a present of gold and siluer, and other things of the country; and they of Tecoantepec did the like [whom Cortez received with honour]; and not long after, this Casique sent for aide to Cortes against his neighbours which did warre against him. Tecoantepec.

In the yeere 1523 [in the month of March] Cortes sent vnto him for his aide Peter de Aluarado, with two hundred soldiers, footemen, and fortie horsemen, and the Caciques of Tecoantepec and Quahutemallan asked them [for Cortez and] for the monsters of the sea which came thither the yeere past, meaning the ships of Gil Gonsales de Auila, being greatly amazed at the sight of them, and woondring much more when they heard that Cortes had bigger then those; and they painted vnto them a mightie carake with (sixe)[1] masts, and sailes and shroudes, and men armed on Gomara, hist. gen., lib. 6, cap. 12. A wittie stratagem.

---

agora diz Joam dalua. Andaram setenta legoas por mar do Sul & costa, sem acharem porto nem fundo, senam hum Cacique que se chamaua Chuchelaquir, que lhes fez bom gasalhado: & mandou com elles dozẽtos caualeiros com hum presente douro & prata, & doutras cousas que auia na terra, & assi o fezeram os de Toantepe, a que Fernam cortez fez assaz honra: & nam tardou muito que lhe nam mandaram pedir socorro pera contra seus vezinhos que os guerreauam.

No anno de mil & quinhentos & vinte & tres, & mes de Março, mandou la ho Cortez em sua ajuda a Pero Daluarado com dozentos soldados, quarenta de cauallo, ao senhor de Toantepee, & Catamalum, & lhes perguntaram por Cortez, & por os monstruos marinhos que ho anno passado aly chegaram, que eram os Nauios de Gil Gonçaluez Dauila, de que estauam muy espantados, & muito mais foram de lhe dizerẽ que Fernam Cortez os tinha mayores, & lhes debuxaram hũa Carraca com mastos, & vellas, & enxarcias,

[1] Not in Portuguese.

horsebacke. This Aluarado [was well received and] went through the countrey and builded there the city of Sant Jago or Saint James, and a towne which he called Segura, leauing certaine of his people in it [to hold possession of the country].

Sant Iago built.

Castagneda hist. delle Indie Orientali, lib. 6, cap. 42.

In the same yeere, 1523, in the moneth of May, Antonie de Britto being captain of the Isles of Maluco, sent his cosen, Simon de Bren, to learn the way by the Isle of Borneo to Malaca. They came in sight of the Islands of Manada and Panguensara; they went through the straight of[1] Treminao and Taquy, and to the Islands of Saint Michael standing in seven degrees, and from thence discouered[2] the Islands of Borneo, and had sight of Pedra Branca, or the white stone, and passed through the straight of Cincapura, and so to the citie of Malaca [acquiring knowledge of many islands, sea and land.]

Manada. Panquensara. The Islands of S.Michael.

Borneo. Pedra Branca.

Gomera, hist. gen., lib. 2, cap. 61.

In this same yeere, 1523, Cortes went with three hundred footemen, and one hundred and fifty horsemen, and forty

---

& caualos, com hum homẽ armado encima, foy Aluarado bem recebido, começou logo a correr aquellas prouincias & senhorealas: & fez nellas a cidade de Sanctiago, & hũa villa q' pos nome Segura, & deixou nella gẽte cõ fe q' segurou a terra.

No anno mesmo de 1523 & mes de Mayo mãdou Antonio de Brito, que estaua por capitam de Maluco a Simão Dabreu seu primo a saber ho caminho de Borneo, pera Malaca, ouueram vista das ylhas de Manada Panguensara. Foram pollo estreito Dantreminao & Taguina ás ilhas de sam Miguel, q' estam em sete graos daltura da parte do norte & da hi descorreram a ilha de Borneo, & toda sua costa, ouueram vista da Pedra branca, passaram polo estreito de Sincapura, foram ter a cidade de Maluca deixando muytas ilhas, mar, & terra por aly sabidas.

Neste mesmo anno de 1523 foy Cortez com trezentos soldados, & cento & cincoenta de caualo, quatrocentos Mexicanos a Panuco

---

[1] Between Minao.

[2] They coasted along.

thousand[1] Mexicans to Panuco [as he had settled] both to discouer it better, and also to inhabite it, and withall to be reuenged upon them which had killed and eaten the soldiers of Francis Garay. They of Panuco resisted him [courageously]; but Cortes in the end ouerthrew them [killing many], and conquered the countrey. And hard by Chila, vpon the riuer he built a towne and named it Santo Stephano del puerto, leauing in it one hundred footemen, and thirtie horsemen and one Peter de Valleio for lieutenant. This iourney cost him seventy-six thousand Castilians,[2] besides the Spanyards, horses, and Maxicans which died there.

Santo Stephano del puerto.

In this yeere, 1523, Francis de Garay made[3] nine ships and two brigandines to goe to Panuco and to Rio de las Palmas to be there as gouernour; for that the emperour had granted vnto him from the coast of Florida vnto Panuco, in regard of the charges, which he had been at in that discouerie. He carried with him eight hundred and fifty soldiers and one hundred and forty horses, and some men out of the Island of Jamaica, where he furnished his fleet

Gomara, hist. gen., lib. 2, cap. 61; & en la conquista de Mexico.

---

como tinha assentado, assi por descobrir milhor aq'lla terra, como por pouoalla, & tomar vingança dos de Guara, que aly mataram & comerã, os de Panuco os nam receberam, mas antes se defenderam varonilmente, cõ tudo foram desbaratados & muitos mortos, & conquistaram a terra: & junto de Chili ao longo do Rio, fundou Cortez hũa villa, a que pos nome santo Esteuam del puerto, deyxou nella cem infantes, & trinta de cauallo, & por Tenente a Pero de Valleijo, custoulhe esta hida setenta & seis mil Castelhanos, afora os Espanhoes, & cauallos & Mexicanos que la ficaram.

Neste anno de 1523 armou Francisco de Garai none nauios, & dous bargantins, pera hir a Panuco & Rio das palmas por gouernador & adiantado, que lhe o Emperador tinha dado da Florida ate Panuco, pello gasto que tinha feyto neste descobrimento, leuou desta vez oito cẽtos & cincoenta soldados, & cento & quorẽta

---

[1] Four hundred. [2] Dollars or reals? [3] Armed.

with munition for the warre; and he went vnto Xagua, an hauen in the Island of Cuba, where he vnderstood that Cortes had peopled the coast of Panuco; and that it might not happen vnto him as it did to Pamphilus de Naruaez, he determined to take another companion with him,[1] and [for this purpose] he desired the Doctor Zuazo to goe to Mexico (and procure some agreement betweene Cortes and him).[2] And they departed from Xagua each one about his busines. Zuazo came in great ieoperdie, and Garay went not cleere without. Garay arriued in Rio de las Palmas on S. James his day, and then he sent vp the riuer one Gonsaluo de Ocampo, who, at his returne, declared that it was an euill and desert countrey; but, notwithstanding, Garay went there on land with 400 footemen and some horsemen, and he commanded one John de Grijalua to search[3] the coast, and he himselfe marched by land towards Panuco, and passed a riuer, which he named Rio montalto: he entred into a great towne,[4] where they found many hennes,[5] wherewith they

Rio de las Palmas.

Rio Montalto.

---

cauallos, & algũs Islenos de Jaimaca, onde forneceo a frota de munições de guerra, & foy se a Xaca porto da ylha da Cuba, onde soube q' Cortez tinha pouoado a costa de Panuco, & por lhe nam acontecer como a Pamphilo de Narbais, determinou yr fazer com elle algum concerto. Pera isso rogou ao Lecenceado Suaso q' fosse a Mexico, & partiram de Xaca cada hum a seu negocio: Suaso correo assaz fortuna, & Garay nam esteve sem algũa.

Chegado ao Rio das Palmas, surgio ahy dia de Santiago: & mandou por elle acima a Gonçalo de o Campo que tornou, dizẽdo que a terra era má & despouoada, com tudo Gara desembarcou nella cõ quatro centos Espanhoes & cauallos, & mandou a Joam de gujaluarez costear a costa, & elle caminhou por terra pera Panuco & passou hum rio a que pos nome Mõte alto, entrou em hũ lugar despouoado, onde achou muitos Galipauos com que refrescarão, &

---

[1] To make an agreement with him.
[2] Dele.
[3] Sail along.
[4] Depopulated village.
[5] Pea fowl?

refreshed themselues: and he tooke some of the people of Chila [with a good deal of trouble] (which he vsed for messengers to certaine places).[1] And (after great trauaile)[1] comming to Panuco they found no victuailes there, by reason of the warres of Cortes (and the spoile of the soldiers).[1] Garray then sent one Gonçalo de Ocampo to Sant Isteuan del puerto to know whether they would receiue him or no. They had a good answere. But Cortes his men priuily by an ambushment tooke forty of Garayes horsemen, alleaging that they came to vsurpe the gouernment of another; and besides this misfortune he lost fower of his ships, whereupon he left off to proceede any farther.[2] Chila.

While Cortes was preparing to set forward to Panuco,[3] Francis de las Casas and Roderigo de la Paz arriued at Gomar. en la Conquista de Mexico, fol. 226.

---

tomou algũs de Chily com assaz trabalho, & chegaram ao Panuco, mas nam acharam mantimento pollas guerras que ho Cortez ay tiueram.

Mandou Garai a Gonçalo de o campo a sancto Esteuam del Puerto a saber se ho receberiam, deram boa reposta, & deitaram lhe cilada, em que prenderam corenta, por dizerem que hiam a vsurpar aquella terra, em que Garay recebeo muita perda, alem de quatro nauios que tinha perdidos, & a gente que lhe fogio em ho Rio de Panuco, & cõ isto temerão a fortuna de Cortez, que sabendo esta noua, deixou as armadas pera descobrir as figueiras,[4] & Chiapa & Tomulam, & volueo o rostro a Panuco.

---

[1] Dele.

[2] Garay sent from the camp one Gonçalez to St. Estevan del Puerto to learn whether they would receive him. A favourable answer was returned, and an ambush prepared whereby forty prisoners were taken, it being alleged that they (Garay) came to usurp that land; by which Garay suffered much damage, besides four ships that he had lost, and the people who fled from him in the river of Panuco; in consequence he dreaded the fortune of Cortez, who learning this news, left the ships to discover Cape Higueras and Chiapa and Tomulam, and turned his face to Panuco.

[3] Affairs being in this state.

[4] Higueras?

Mexico with letters patents, wherein the Emperour gaue the gouernment of Nueua Spagna and all the countrey which Cortes had conquered to Cortes, and namely Panuco. Whereupon he staied his iourney. But he sent Diego de Ocampo with the said letters patents,[2] and Pedro de Aluarado with store of footemen and horsemen. Garay, knowing this, thought it best to yeeld himselfe vnto Cortes his hands, and to go to Mexico, which thing he did, hauing discouered a great tract of land.

Gomara, en la Conquista de Mexico, fol. 242. San Gil de buena Vista in the Bay of Honduras.

In this yeere, 1523,[3] Gil Gonçales de Auila made a discouerie, and peopled a towne called San Gil de buena vista, standing in 14 degrees toward the north, and almost in the bottome of the bay called the Ascension or the Honduras. He began to conquere it because he best knew the secrets thereof[4] (and that it was a very rich countrey).[5]

Gomara, en la conquista de Mexico, fol. 229, & in sequentibus.

In this yeere, 1523, the sixt day of December, Peter de Aluarado went from the citie of Mexico, by Cortes his commandement, to discouer and conquere Quahutemallan,

---

Estando nisto Francisco de las casas & Rodrigo dela paz, chegaram a Mexico cõ prouisões, em q' o Emperador mandaua a Fernã Cortez a gouernança da noua Espanha, & todo o mais q' tiuesse conquistado ate Panuco, polo q' mãdoula dinheiro a Diego de ho campo, & Pero daluarado cõ gẽte de pè & caualo, q' o Garia sabẽdo tomou por partido meterse nas mãos de Cortez, & hirse a Mexico deixando muito descuberto. Tãbé foy ao descobrimẽto neste mesmo anno Gil gonçaluez dauilla, & pouoaçam Gil de Boa vista, que estara em catorze graos daltura da parte do norte, na fim ou quàsi da Baya da Ascensam começou a conquistar aquela terra pera saber milhor os segredos della.

Neste anno de 1523 aos seis dias do mes de Dezẽbro partio Pero daluarado da cidade de Mexico por mãdado d' Cortez, a cõquista & descobrimẽto de Cataimalã & Autalã & Chiapa, &

---

[1] As far as. [2] Upon this he sent money to Diego from the camp.
[3] Also in this same year. [4] That he might learn its secrets better.
[5] Not in Portuguese.

Vtlatlan, Chiapa, Xochnuxco, and other townes toward the South Sea.[1] He had with him three hundred soldiers, 170[2] horsemen (foure field peeces),[3] and some noble men of Mexico, with people of the countrey to aide him as well in the warre, as by the way being long. He went by Tecoantepec to Xochmuxco, and other places aboue said, with great trauaile and losse of his men; but he discouered and subdued all the countrey. There are in those parts certaine hils that haue alume in them, and out of which distilleth a certaine liquor like vnto oile, and sulphur or brimstone,[4] whereof the Spanyards made excellent gunpowder. He trauailed 400 leagues in this voiage (and passed certaine riuers which were so hot that they could not well endure to wade through them).[5] He builded a citie, calling it Sant Iago de Quahutemallan. [The country appeared so desirable that] Peter de Aluarado begged the gouernment of this countrey, and the report is that it was giuen him.

Oile distilling out of hils.

Ibidem, fol. 230.

Sant Jago de Quahutemallan.

In the yeere 1523, the 8 day of December, Cortes sent Diego de Godoy, with 100 footemen and 30 horsemen (two

Gomara, en la conquista de Mexico, fol. 233.

Chanuco, & outros pouos q' por ali estauam, leuou. 300. soldados. 140 caualos, & algũs senhores Mexicanos cõ gẽte da terra q' os ajudaram, assi na guerra como polo caminho q' era cõprido, forã ter a Toãtepè & a Chanuco & o mais acima nomeado, & com assaz trabalho & mortos, descobrio & cõquistou tudo, õde á serras de pedra hume & licor q' pareçe azeite muito bõ, & muito bõ ẽxofre q' sẽ ser refinado fazẽ poluora dele, ali andaram quatro cẽtas legoas, & fizerã hũa cidade, q' poseram nome Sãtiago de Cautumalam, pareceo tambem a Pero daluarado aquella terra, que pedio della ha gouernança, & diz qoe lhe foy dada.

Nesta era de 1524[6] a oito de Dezembro mandou Cortez a Diogo de Godoy com cem soldados & trinta cavallos, & muitos amigos & aliados dos Indios contra a prouincia de Chamola, aa villa do

---

[1] And other people in that direction. [2] 140. [3] Not in Portuguese.
[4] Which, without being refined, was used to make gunpowder.
[5] Not in Portuguese. [6] 1523?

field peeces),[1] and many of his friends, Indians [against the province of Chamola], vnto the towne Del Espiritu santo [and to other countries that lie between Chiapa and Cotumolam, where Pedro d'Alvarado had arrived]. He ioined himselfe with the captaine of that towne, and they went to Chamolla, the head citie of that prouince; and that being taken all the countrey grew quiet [and he left it well known].

Villa del Espiritu Santo.

Chamolla.

Gomara, en la Conquista de Mexico, fol. 234.

In the yeere 1524, in Februarie, Cortes sent one Roderigo[2] Rangel, with 150 Spaniards and many of the Tlaxcallans and Mexicans, against the Zapotecas and Nixticas, and vnto other prouinces and countreyes not so well discouered: they were resisted at the first, but quickly put the people to the woorst, and kept them for euer after in subiection.[3]

Gomar. hist. gen., lib. 3, cap. 21.

In this same yeere, 1524, one Roderigo de Bastidas was sent[4] to discouer, people, and gouerne the countrey of Santa Martha, where he lost his life because he would not suffer the soldiers to take the spoile of a certaine towne.[5] They

---

Spirito Sancto, & a outras terras q' estam entre Chiapa & Catumalam, onde Pero Daluarado era chegado Foy, Diogo de Godoi aa villa do Spiritu Sancto, & ajuntouse com o capitam della, & entraram ate chamolla que he cidade & cabeça daquella prouincia, & tomada pacificouse toda a terra & ficou bem descuberta & sabida.

Neste mesmo anno de 1524 & mes de Feuereiro, mandou o Cortez a Diogo rangel cõ cento & cincoẽta Espanhoes & muitos Trascaloes & Mexicanos, aos Zapotecas, Nistecas, & a outras prouincias q' nã eram bẽ sabidas & descubertas, tiueram la guerras, mas por fim de tudo desbarataram, & castigaram nos de maneira, que nunca mais ajuntaram nẽ boliram consigo.

Neste mesmo anno de 1524 foy Rodrigo de bastidas descobrir, gouernar, & pouoar sancta Marta, o que lhe custou a vida per nam deixar aos soldados saquear a terra & destroir a gente della, se

---

[1] Not in Portuguese.

[2] Diego.

[3] They fought long, but in the end they were overcome and punished in such a way that they never more united against nor troubled him.

[4] Went.

[5] To pillage the country and destroy the people.

ioined with Peter Villa-forte, and he, being sometimes his entire friend,[1] did helpe to kill him with daggers, lying in his bed. Afterward, Don Pedro de Lugo and Don Alfonso, his sonne, were gouernours of that place, which vsed themselues like couetous tyrants, whereof grew much trouble [in those parts].

In this same yeere also, 1524, after that the Licentiate Lucas Vasques de Aillon had obtained of the emperour the gouernment of Chicora, he armed for that purpose certaine ships from the citie of Santo Domingo and went to discouer the countrey, and to inhabite it [or to repay the injustice and injury that had been committed in those parts with body, life and goods]; but he was lost, with all his companie, leauing nothing done woorthy of memorie. And I cannot tell how it commeth to passe, except it be by the iust iudgement of God, that of so much gold and precious stones as Gomar., hist., gen., lib. 2, cap. 7.

---

ajuntaram com Pero de villa forte, em q' elle confiaua & fazia muyta conta, & ajudou a matalo aas punhaladas jazendo na cama, & depois forã por gouernadores dõ Pedro de lugo & seu filho dõ Luis de Lugo, q' se ouueram como tiranos cobiçosos, de que socederão muitos males em aquellas partes.

E no mesmo anno de 1524 despois do lecenceado Lucas de Seilam ter do Emperador a gouernança de Chicora, armou pera ella certos nauios da cidade de sam Domingos, q' foy descobrir a terra, & pouoala, ou pagar as injustiças & injurias q' em aquellas partes tinham feitas, com o corpo, vida, & fazenda, porque la se perdeo cõ toda armada, sem la fazer cousa dina de memoria, sòmẽte verse nela a justiça diuina: & em outras muitas se viram em aquella partes das Antilhas, Indias Portuguesas, pelos roubos, tiranias, & males que se faziam nellas, por onde parece que nunca faltaram Nabuquo do nosores que castiguem nossos males, que sam tantos como vemos. Que foram de tantos Castelhanos, Portugueses, como tem hido as Antilhas & Indias, ouro, prata, especea-

---

[1] Whom he trusted and made much of, but who, etc.

haue beene gotten in the Antiles by so many Spaniards, little or none remaineth, but the most part is spent and consumed, and no good thing done.[1]

Gomar., hist. gen., lib. 2, cap. 65, & en la Conquista de Mexico, fol. 243.

In this yeere, 1524, Cortes sent one Christopher de Olid, with a fleete, to the Island of Cuba, to receiue the vitailes and munitions which Alonso de Contreras had prepared, and to discouer and people the country about Cape de Higueras and the Honduras [and those parts that were not yet well known]; and to send Diego Hurtado de Mendoça by sea, to search the coast (from thence euen to Darien)[2] to finde out the streight which was thought to run into the South sea, as the emperour had commanded. He sent also two ships from Panuco to search along the coast vnto Florida.

---

rias, drogoas, aljofre, pedraria, & mercadarias que de la trouxeram? Tudo he gastado, consumido sem nenhũ fruito, & algum que quis ter alma, ficou sem vida, & ainda me pareçe que quem se quiser ocupar nesta materia, não na acabaria na de Matusalem dobrado.

Neste mesmo anno de quinhẽtos & vinte & quatro, mandou Fernão cortez Christouam de Olim cõ hũa armada á ilha da Cuba tomar mãtimentos, moniçõeſ, que Contreiras tinha feitas, & descobrir & pouoar as funduras, & aquellas terras que nam eram ainda bẽ sabidas, q' mãdasse Diogo furtado de Mendoça por mar â costa a buscar o estreito q' deziam passar da outra banda, como o Emperador mandaua, & assi enuiou dous nauios de Panuco ate Florida ao mesmo cabo de Catumalam a Penamoa, por nam ficar cousa q'

---

[1] Only in this is seen the Divine justice: and otherwise it is abundantly visible in those parts of the Antilles or Portuguese India, on account of the robberies, oppression and ills that have been committed, whence it appears that there is always a Nabuchodonosor who punishes our evil deeds, which are so great as we see. What has become of the many Spaniards, Portuguese, who gambled in the Antilles and India; of so much gold, silver, spice, drugs, pearls, jewels, and merchandise, that was brought thence? All is wasted and consumed leaving no fruit; and any one who appeared to have any soul lost his life; and besides it seems to me that whoever would embark in these matters, would never finish, not even if he lived to twice the age of Methusaleh.

[2] Not in Portuguese.

He commanded also certaine brigandines to search the coast from Zacatullan vnto Panama.[1] This Christopher de Olid came to the Island of Cuba, and made a league with Diego Velasquez against Cortes, and so set saile and went on land hard by Puerto de Cauallos, standing in 10 degrees to the north, and built a towne, which he called Triumpho de la Cruz. He tooke Gil Gonzales de Auila prisoner, and killed his nephew and the Spaniards that were with him, all sauing one childe, and shewed himselfe an enimie to Cortes, who had spent in that expedition thirty thousand castellans of gold to doe him pleasure withall.

Cortes vnderstanding hereof the same yeere 1524, and in the moneth of October,[2] he went out of the citie of Mexico to seeke Christopher de Olid to be revenged of him, and also to discouer [countries as yet unknown to the Spaniards], carrying with him three hundred Spanish footemen and horsemen, and Quahutimoc king of Mexico, and other great lords of the same city [for greater peace.] And comming to the towne called La villa del Espirito santo, he

Gomar., hist. gen., lib. 2, cap. 66, & en la Conquista de Mexico, fol. 246 & 251.

---

nam fosse sabida. Christouam de olid chegado à ilha da Cuba, assentou liga com Diogo velhasquez cõtra Cortez, dada à vella, foy desembarcar jũto do porto de caualos em dez graos de parte do norte, & fez a villa do Triunfo da Cruz, prẽdeo Gil gonçaluez Auila, matoulhe hum sobrinho com os espanhoes q' o seguiram ficou soo no ninho, & decrarou se por imigo de Cortez, que gastou nesta armada trinta mil Castelhanos, por lhe fazer boa obra.

Sabẽdo Fernam cortez isto, na mesma era de vinte & quatro no mes de Abril, partio da cidade de Mexico em busca de Christouam de olid, pera tomar delle vingança, & descobrir a terra & prouincias, que ainda por Espanhoes nam eram vistas, leuando trezẽtos delles de pé & caualo, & el rey Catinococim & principes de Mexico pera mais pacifico, chegado a villa do Spiritu sancto fez asaber aos

---

[1] To the same cape from Catumelam to Panama, so as to leave nothing unknown.

[2] April ?

[made known his determination and] required guides of the lords of Tauasco and Xicalanco, which they prouided immediately (and they sent him ten of their principall men for guides) :[1] who gaue him also a map of cotton wooll,[2] wherein was painted the situation of the whole country from Xicalanco vnto Naco, and Nito, and euen as farre as Nicaragua, with their mountaines, hils, fields, meadowes, vallies, riuers, cities and townes. And Cortes in the meane time sent for three ships which were at the hauen of Medellin to follow him along the coast.

An excellent large map of cotton wooll.

Gomara, hist. gen., lib. 2, cap. 67 & 68, & en la Conquista de Mexico, fol. 257

In this yeere 1524 they came to the citie of Izancanac, where he vnderstood that the king Quahutimoc and the Mexicans that were in his companie were conspired against him and the Spanyards: for the which he hanged the king and two others of the chiefe: and so came to the citie of Mazatlan, and after that to Tiaca, the head citie of a prouince so called standing in the middest of a lake: and here about they began to finde the traine of the Spanyards, which they went to seeke, and so they went to Toscola and Zuzullin [and other places of Nico, and finding a good port, he built a city called Ascensa'm de Nosse Senhora], (and at

Mazatlan. Tiaca.

Zuzullin.

---

senhores de Tauasco & Picalam sua determinaçam, & pedir que lhe mandassem guias, elles o fizeram logo & em hũ debuxo deram hũ pano dalgodã tecido cm q' estaua toda a terra q' a de Xicalã Anico & Neco, & Nicaragas com mõtanhas, serras, campinas vallas, & ribeiras, cidades, & villas, & mandou a Medelim aparelhar tres nauios cõ mantimẽtos, monições & que fossem ao longo da costa.

No anno de 1528,[3] chegaram á cidade de Zacanaca, onde souberam como el Rey Catimococim & Mexicanos se conjurauam contra Cortez & Castelhanos, polo q' el Rey & algũs foram enforcados, donde partiram & chegarão á cidade de Matalam: & despois a Tiaca cabeça da prouincia, está no meyo de hũa alagoa: & ja por aqui achauam rastro dos Espanhoes q' buscauam, & forã a

[1] Not in Portuguese. [2] Woven. [3] 1524 ?

length came to the towne of Nito: from Nito Cortes with his owne companie, and all the Spanyards that he found there, departed to the shore or strand called La Baia de Sant Andres, and finding there a good hauen he builded a towne in that place and called it Natividad de Nuestra Señora.)[1] Gomar. in the Conquest of Mexico, fol. 268. Natiuadad de Nuestra Sennora.

From hence Cortes went to the towne of Truxillo, standing in the hauen of the Honduras, where the Spanyards dwelling there did entertaine him well: and while he was there, there arriued a ship which brought newes of the stirre in Mexico (in Cortes his absence):[2] whereupon he sent word to Gonsalo de Sandoual to march with his companie from Naco to Mexico by land toward the South sea vnto Quahutemallan, because that is the vsuall plaine and safest way,[3] and he left as captaine in Truxillo Fernando de Saavedra his cozen: and he himselfe went by sea along the coast of Jucatan (to Chalchicoeca, now called Sant Juan de Vllhua, and so to)[4] Medellin, and from thence to Mexico, where he Truxillo. Honduras. Gomara in the Conquest of Mexico, fol. 270 & 273.

Toscola & Sucelim & outros logares de Nico, & por ser bom porto fez aly hũa villa, a que pos nome Ascençam de nossa senhora.

Daqui foy Cortez à villa de Truzilho, q' esta em o porto de Funduras, & bẽ recebido polos Espanhoes que ahi estauam, no qual tempo chegou hum nauio que deu noua dos males de Mexico, pelo qual mandou logo Cortez, Gonçalo de Sandoual com gẽte de pee & caualo descobrir terra contra o mar do sul a Cotumalam, por ser mais breue caminho, & deixou em Trugilho por capitã à Fernã sayauedra seu primo, elle foise por mar & costa de Siucatam a Medelim & dai a Mexico, onde foy bẽ recebido auẽdo mais de anno & meo que da ly era partido, repousou dos muitos trabalhos & perigos que auia passado de quinhentas legoas por terras mui

---

[1] Not in Portuguese.

[2] Not in Portuguese.

[3] Whereupon Cortez sent Goncalo de Sandoval with horse and foot to Cotumalam to discover the country towards the South Sea, that being the shortest road.

[4] Not in Portuguese.

was well receiued, hauing beene from thence 18 monethes,[1] (and had gone fiue hundred leagues, trauelling often out of his way, and enduring much hardness).

Gomara, hist. gen., lib 5, cap. 1 & 2. Peru.

In the yeere 1525 Francis Pizarro and Diego Almagro went from Panama to discouer Peru, standing beyond the line towarde the south, which they called Nueua Castillia. The gouernour Pedro Arias would not entermeddle with this expedition, because of the euill newes which his captaine, Francis Vezerra, had brought [who never reached further than the port of Pinas towards the north].

Francis Pizarro went first in a ship, having with him 140 soldiers, and Almagro went after him in another ship with 70 men. He came to Rio de San Juan, standing in three degrees, where he got two thousand pesoes of gold; and not finding Pizarro, he went[2] to seeke him, repenting his doings by reason of a mishap that he had.[3] But [attracted

---

fragosas, & dellas desponadas, andaram em montanhas muy asperas, & grandes ribeyras comendo eruas de que muitos faleçeram.

No anno de 1525 partio Francisco piçarro & Diogo dalmagro de penama ao descobrimento daquellas terras & prouincias, a que chamam Peru, que estam áquem & alem da linha da parte do sul, a que poseram nome a noua Castela, o gouernador Pedraires nam se quis meter na armada, polla roim noua que lhe trouxera seu capitam Francisco bezerra, que nam chegou mais q' ao porto de Pinas, que está da parte do norte.

Francisco Piçarro diz que foy diante em hũ nauio com cento & quarenta soldados, Almagro tras elle em outro com setenta, deu no Rio de sam Joam, que está em tres graos daq'lla banda, onde tomou vinte mil pesos douro. E como nam achassem Francisco

---

[1] Here he reposed after the great labours and dangers he had passed through in journeying fifteen hundred leagues through rough and desert countries, over rugged mountains and great marshes, eating herbs, by which many perished.

[2] Returned.

[3] Who had changed his miud, owing to a disaster that had happened.

by the gold of Almagro] he went first to an island called Isla del Gorgona, and afterwards to another called Isla del Gallo, and to the riuer called Rio del Peru, standing in two degrees northwards, whereof so many famous countreyes take their name. From thence they went to Rio de San Francisco, and to Cabo de Passaos, where they passed the equinoctiall line, and came to Puerto Vejo, standing in one degree to the south of the line: from whence they sailed to the riuers of Chinapanpa, Tumbez, and Payta, standing in 4 or 5 degrees, where they had knowledge of king Atabalipa and of the exceeding wealth and riches of his palace. Which newes mooued Pizarro speedily to returne home againe to (Panama, and so into)[1] Spaine, and to request the gouernment of that countrey of the emperour: which he also obtained. He had spent aboue three yeeres before in this discouerie, not without enduring great trauaile and perils.[2]

Isla del Gorgona. Isla del Gallo. Rio del Peru. Cabo de Passaos. Puerto vijo. Tumbez. Payta.

In the same yeere 1525 there was sent out of Spaine a fleet of seuen ships, whereof was captaine generall Don Garcia de Loaisa to the Islands of Maluco. They went

Pet. Martyr., decad. 8, cap. 9. Gomar., hist. gen., lib. iv, cap. 12.

---

piçarro, tornaram em sua busca, que estaua arrependido por hum desastre que lhe acontecera: mas com efforço do ouro Dalmagro: foy á ylha de Gorgora, & do Galo, & ao rio do Peru, que está em dous graos donde tantas & tam grandes prouincias tomaram apelido. Dahi foram ao Rio de sam Francisco, & ao cabo de Passao, onde passaram a linha. Chegado ao porto que está hum grao da parte do Sul, dõde foram pellos Rios de Chinapápa, Paita, Trubez, q' esta em quatro ou cinco graos, donde souberam que auia aly muita riqueza del rey Atabalipa & boa terra, q' moueo Frãçisco piçarro tornar a Castella a pedir ao Emperador aquella gouernança: & andou mais de tres annos nesta demanda.

No mesmo anno de 1525 foy enuiado de castella hũa armada de

---

[1] Not in Portuguese.

[2] And he spent more than three years in following up this request.

from the citie of the Groine and passed by the Islands of the Canaries, and went to Brasill, where they found an island in two degrees, and named it S. Matthew: and it seemed to be inhabited, because they found in it orenge trees [and other fruit trees, traces of] hogs, and hennes in caues,[1] and vpon the rindes of most of the trees there were grauen Portugall letters, shewing that the Portugals had beene there 17[2] yeeres before that time. A patache or pinnesse of theirs passed the streight of Magellane,[3] hauing in her one Iohn de Resaga, and ran all along the coast of Peru and Noua Spagna. They declared all their successe vnto Cortes,[4] and told him that frier Garsia de Loaisa was passed to the islands of cloues. But of this fleete the admirall onely came thither, wherein was captaine one Martine Mingues de Carchona: for Loaisa and the other captaines [who

The Isle of S. Mathew.

Gomara in the Conquest of Mexico, page 281.

---

sete vellas, Capitam dellas frey Garcia de Loaes: pera as ilhas de Maluco, partiram da cidade de Crunha, atrauessando das ylhas Canareas ao Brasil, dous graos alem da linha, acharam hũa ylha que poseram nome sam Matheus, parecia ser ja pouoada por ter larangeyras, & outras aruores de fruyto, acharam rastro de porcos: & galinhas no mato, & nos troncos de todas aruores letras Portuguesas: que denunciauam auer oytenta & sete annos que aly esteueram: alem do estreyto do Magalhaes se apartou delles hum nauio de remo que leuauam que chamauam Patax, em que hia dom Joam de recaga, foy ter aa costa do Peru, & aa noua Espanha correndo a toda: deu conta a Fernam Cortez do que vira, & como frey Garcia de Loaes era passado aas ylhas do Crauo. Mas de toda esta frota nam chegou a ellas, se nam a nao Capitaina, hindo por Capitam della, Martim Minguez de carquicena, por Loaes, & outros Capitães que lhe soccederam, todos faleceram. Mas esta

---

[1] The bush.

[2] 87.

[3] Beyond the Strait of Magellan, a row boat, called a patache, which they had, separated from them.

[4] They recounted to Cortez what they had seen.

succeeded him] died by the way. [But this alone sufficed to put the whole country in revolt, so well-affectioned are the Moors of Maluco to the Spaniards.] (All the Moores of Maluco were found well affectioned to the Spaniards.)[1]

In the same yeere 1525 the pilot Stephen Gomes went from the port of the Groine toward the north to discouer[2] the streight (vnto the)[3] Malucos, but to keep Magellan from the route, (to whom)[4] they would giue [him] no charge in the fleete of frier Garsia de Loaisa. But yet the Earle Don Fernando de Andrada, and the Doctor Beltram, and the marchant Christopher de Sarro [did not fail him, but] furnished a gallion for him [to make this discouery so much desired], and he went from (the Groine in)[5] Galicia to the Island of Cuba, and to the point of Florida, sailing by day because he knew not the land [and (not seeing?) in the bay, harbour, river, or inlet, he passed (the bay Angra, and the riuer Enseada, and so went)[6] ouer to the other side. It is also reported that he came to Cape Razo in 46[7] degrees to the north: from whence he came backe againe to the Groine laden with slaues. The

Pet. Martyr., decad. 8, pag. 601. Gomara, historia general, lib. i, cap. 5.

---

soo abastou pera meter toda ha terra em grande reuolta: tam affeyçoados sam os Mouros de Maluco a Castelhanos.

No mesmo anno da era de mil & quinhentos & vinte & cinco, partio ho piloto Esteuam Gomez do porto [de Crunha?] contra a parte do Norte, descobrindo ho estreito de Maluco, com quanto por fogir ao Magalhães do caminho nam lhe quiseram dar nesta armada de Lois nenhum carrego, mas com tudo nam lhe faltou ho Conde dom Fernando Dandrade, & ho doctor Beltrão, & ho mercador Christouam de Sarro, que lhe armarão hum galeam pera este descobrimento tam desejado. Partio de Galiza, foy tomar ha ylha da Cuba, & a ponta da Florida, nauegando de dia por nam saber a terra, & ver em toda Baya angra, rio, enscada se passaua a outra banda, diz que chegaram ao cabo raso, que estaa da parte do Norte, em quarenta & quatro graos daltura, donde tornaram á cidade de

---

[1] Dele. [2] Discovering. [3] Of.
[4] Dele. [5] Not in Portuguse. [6] Dele. [7] 44.

newes hereof ran by and by through Spaine, that he was come home laden with cloues as mistaking the word: and it was carried to the court of Spaine [post haste to ask a reward, which caused great joy and entertainment principally to those who fitted out the vessel]: but when the truth was knowne[1] it turned to a pleasant iest. In this voiage Gomes was ten monethes.

In this yeere 1525 Don George de Meneses, captaine of Maluco, and with him Don Garcia Henriquez, sent a foyst to discouer land towards the north, wherein went as captaine one Diego de Rocha, and Gomes de Sequeira for pilot [who afterwards went as pilot on an Indian voyage]. In 9 or 10 degrees they found certaine islands standing close together [they passed among them], and they called them the Islands of Gomes de Sequeira, he being the first pilot that discouered them. And they came backe againe [to the fort] by[2] the Island of Batochina [do moro].

The Isle of Batochina by Gilolo.

Crunha carregar descrauos, os que isto ouuiram, cuydando que deziam crauos, mandaram polla posta aa Corte de Castella, pedir aluiçara, que pos grande aluoroço & contentamento principalmente aos que armaram, chegado o Roxo com a noua carta, foy tal azombaria q' andauam corridos: disso porque gastaram muyto sem nenhum proueyto: & Esteuão gomez pos dez meses no caminho.

Neste anno de 1525 estando dom Jorge de Meneses capitam de Maluco, elle dom Garcia anriquez mandara hũa fusta descobrir contra ho norte, hya por capitã della Diogo da rocha, & piloto Gomez de sequeira, que depois andou por piloto na carreira da India, em noue ou dez graos daltura, acharam hũas ilhas juntas, andaram por entrellas; poseram lhe nome as Ylhas de Gomez de Sequeira por ser o primeiro piloto que as descobrio, donde se tornaram aa fortaleza, por derredor da ilha da Batachina do

---

[1] There was such joking that they were ashamed; and this because there had been much expence and no profit.

[2] Passing round.

In the yeere 1526 there went out of Siuill one Sebastian Cabota, a Venetian (by his father, but borne at Bristol in England),[1] being chiefe pilote to the emperour, with fower ships toward Maluco [islands]. They came to Pernambuco, and staied there three monethes [waiting] for a winde to double the Cape of Saint Augustine. In the Bay of Patos or of ducks [which lies to the south] the admirall ship perished; and being without hope to get to the Isles of Maluco[2] they there made a pinnesse to enter vp the riuer of Plate, and to search it. They ran 60 leagues vp before they came to the barre:[3] where they left their great ships, and with their small pinesses passed vp the riuer Parana, which the inhabitants count to be the principall riuer. Having rowed vp 120 leagues, they made a fortresse and staied there aboue a yeere: and then rowed further till they came to the mouth of another riuer called Paragioa, and perceiuing that the countrey yeelded gold and siluer they kept on their

Gomara, historiæ general. lib. 3, cap. 39.

Rio Parana.

Rio Paragioa.

---

moro. No anno de 1526 partio de Sevilha Sebastiã gaboto Venezeano, & piloto mòr do Emperador, leuaua quatro vellas p'a as ilhas de Maluco, foram ter a Fernam buco, onde esteueram tres meses aguardando por tempo pera dobrar ho cabo de são Agostinho. Na baya dos patos que estaa em á parte do Sul, perderam a nao capitaina. Desesperados de hirẽ aas ilhas do Crauo, fizerã hũa galeota aly pera entrarẽ o rio da prata, & saber o que dentro auia, chegado ao rio que se mete nelle sessenta legoas da Barra, deyxaram os nauios da carrega, & com os menores sobiram pella principal ribeira que os da terra chamam Parana, por ser grande agoa.

Tendo andado por este rio acima, cẽto & vinte legoas, fizeram hũa fortaleza em que gastarã mais de hum anno: despois foram pella mesma ribeira ate a boca doutra, que se diz Paragay, & por verem sinais douro & prata, foram tras sua cobiça, & mandando

---

[1] Not in Portuguese.

[2] Cloves.

[3] Arrived at the river that flows into it sixty leagues from the bar, they left, etc.

course,[1] and sent[2] a brigandine before; (but)[3] those of the countrey tooke it: and Cabote vnderstanding of it thought it best to turne backe vnto their forte, and there tooke in his men which he had left there, and so went downe the riuer where his ships did ride, and from thence he sailed home to Siuill in the yeere 1530, leauing discouered about[4] two hundred leagues within this riuer, reporting it to be very nauigable, and that it springeth out of a lake named Bombo. It standeth in (the firme land of)[5] the kingdome of Peru [in a cold country], running[6] through the vallies of Xauxa, and meeteth with the riuers Parso, Bulcasban, Cay, Parima, Hiucax, with others, which make it very broad and great. It is said also, that out of this lake runneth the riuer called Rio de San Francesco; and by this meane the riuers come to be so great. For the riuers that come out of lakes are bigger then those which proceede from a spring.

The fountaine of the riuer of Plata.

The biggest riuers proceed from lakes.

In the yeere 1517[7] one Pamphilus de Naruaez went out of S. Lucar de Barameda to be generall of the coast and land

Ramusius, 3 vol., fol. 310.

---

hum bargantim diante, os da terra lho tomaram, o que sabendo Gaboto se tornou aa fortaleza, recolhida a gẽte q' nella deixara, se tornou pello rio abaixo onde as naos ficaram. E dahi a Seuilha no anno de 1530 deixando descuberto mais de dozentas legoas por este rio, que dizem ser nauegauel, & nacer de hum lago que se chama Bombo, estaa no reyno de Peru em terra fria, & diz que passa polos vales de Xauxa. E adiãte se ajuntam a elle os rios de Parço, Bulcasbã, Cay, Poryma, Hiucax, & outros que o fazem muy grande, & tambem dizẽ que deste lago sae ho rio de sam Francisco. E por isso estes rios sam tamanhos, q' as mais das ribeiras q' saem de lagos sam mayores que as que nacem de fontes.

No anno de 1527 partio Pamphilo de Narbaes de sam Lucas de Baramedo, por adiantado da costa, da terra da florida, ate o rio

---

[1] Their covetousness followed ? [2] Sending. [3] Dele.
[4] More than. [5] Dele. [6] And is said to run. [7] 1527.

of Florida as farre as Rio de las Palmas, and had with him fiue ships, 600 soldiers, 100 horses, besides a great summe and quantitie of victuailes, armour, clothing, and other things. He could not goe on land where his desire was, but went on land somewhat neere to Florida with three hundred of his companie, some horses, and some victuailes, commanding the ships to goe to Rio de las Palmas; in which voiage they were almost all lost: and those which escaped passed great dangers, hunger and thirst, in an island called Xamo, and by the Spaniards Malhada, being very drie and barren, where the Spaniards killed one another, and the people also of the countrey did the like. Naruaez and those which went with him sawe some golde with certaine Indians, and he demanded of them where they gathered it: and they answered that they had it at Apalachen. They therefore searched[1] this gold, and in searching came to the said towne,[2] where they found no gold nor siluer: they saw many bay trees, and almost all other kinde of trees, with beasts, birds [of Spain], (and such like).[3] The men and women of this

The Isle of Xamo or Malhada.

Apalachen.

---

das palmas, leuaua cinco nauios, seis centos soldados, cem caualos, grande soma de bastimentos, armas vestidos, nam pode tomar porto onde desejaua, sahio em terra acerca da Florida, com trezentos companheyros, cauallos poucos, mantimentos, mandou os nauios aos rios das palmas: em cuja demanda se perderam quasy todos, os que escaparam passaram tam grande trabalho, fome, sede, que em hũa ylha que se chama Machado Seco, onde hos Espanhoes se mataram hũs aos outros, & dizem que aos da terra asi fizeram. Narbais & os que com elle hiam viram hũs Indios com ouro, preguntaram lhe donde o tirauam, disseram que em Palacham, foram em sua busca, acharam hum lugar pequeno & terra pobre sem ouro nẽ prata, auia nella loureiros, & quasi todas aruores, alimarias aues de Espanha, os homẽs & molheres, altos,

---

[1] They went in search of.

[2] A small village and a poor country.

[3] Not in Portuguese.

place are high and strong, very light, and so swift runners, that they will take deere at their pleasure, and will not grow wearie though they run a whole day. From Apalachen they went to a towne called Aute; and from thence to Xamo, a poore countrey with small sustinance. These people bring vp their children very tenderly, and make great lamentation when any of them dieth; they neither weepe nor lament at the death of any olde bodie [they did not kill the Spainiards nor eat them, as they were then weak with work and the life they had led]. Here the people desired the Spanyards to cure their sicke folks, for they had many diseased (and certaine of the Spanyards being in extreme pouertie assaied it, and vsed praier, and it pleased God that they did indeede recouer),[1] as well those that were hurt[2] as those which were otherwise diseased;[3] in so much, that one which was thought verily to be dead, was by them restored to life, [and this was not much if their faith was as great as the occasion required] (as they themselues reporte).[4]

Aute.

Xamo.

forçosos, muy ligeiros, tam grandes corredores que tomauam os veados, & corças, & nam cansauam de correr hum dia todo.

De Palacham foram á villa de Haute, & dahi a Xama, terra pobre, de pouco mantimẽto, criam os filhos com regalo, quando morrem fazem por elles gram pranto, pellos velhos nam choram, nam mataram os Castelhanos nem os comeram por estarem magros, fracos do trabalho: & da vida que passaram. Mandauam lhes que curassem os enfermos: que auia aly muitos, & como se vissem na ora da morte pediram a Deos & a sua mãy socorro, foram ouuidos de maneira que quantos aas suas mãos vinham todos sarauam, assi aleyjados, como hos de doenças muy incurauees, atee ressuscitarem hum morto: & nam era muito se tinham a fee tam ynteyra como ho tempo queria.

[1] And as they saw themselves at the point of death, they prayed to God and to his Mother for help; their prayers were answered in such a manner that all at their hands were healed.

[2] Maimed.

[3] As those affected with severe disease.

[4] Not in Portuguese.

They affirme that they passed through many countreies and many strange people, differing in language, apparell, and customes. And because they plaied the physitions, they were as they passed greatly esteemed and held for gods, and the people did no hurt vnto them, but would giue them part of such things as they had. (Therefore they passed quietly, and trauelled so farre till)[1] they came to a people, that vse continually to liue in heards with their cattel as the Arabians doe. They be poore, and eate snakes, lisards, spiders, ants, and al kinde of vermine, and herewith they liue so well contented that commonly they sing and dance [and divert themselues.] They buie the women of their enimies, and kill their daughters, because they would not haue them marrie with them (whereby they might increase).[2] They trauailed through certaine places, where the women gaue sucke vnto their children til they were ten or twelve yeeres of age; and where certaine men (being hermaphrodites)[3] doe marrie one another [and here are such people which neither weep nor make water, and it is said that if they do it they die]. These

---

Dizem que passaram por muitas terras de gentes diferẽtes em lingoagẽs, trajos, costumes: mas por hos fisicos serem la muy estimados, & mais estes que auiam por deoses nam lhe faziam nenhum dano: antes lhe dauam dessa pobreza que tinham, foram ter aos lagazes que andam em cabildos com seus gados: como Alarues, & sam tam pobres que comem cobras, lagartos, aranhas, formigas, & todos os bichos, com isto viuem tam contentes que sempre cantam, bailam, & se desenfadam: compram as molheres aos imigos, matam as filhas, pellas nam casarem com elles, passauam por terras que os filhos mamauam dez, doze annos: em outras que casam os homẽs hũs com outros, & ahi tays pouos que nam choram nem rim: & diz que se o fazem, morrem por isso, andaram os Castelhanos nestes trabalhos mais de oyto centos legoas: & nam ficaram mais de sete, ou oyto que escaparam, foram ter ao mar do

[1] Not in Portuguese.
[2] Not in Portuguese.
[3] Not in Portuguese.

Spaniards trauailed aboue 800 leagues; and there escaped aliue in this journey not aboue seuen or eight of them. They came vpon the coast of the South sea, vnto a citie called Saint Michael of Culuacan, standing in 23 degrees and vpward (toward the north).[1]

Gomar., hist. gen., lib. 2, cap. 72, and in the Conquest of Mexico, fol. 281.

This yeere 1527, when Cortes vnderstood by the pinnesse aforesaide that Don Garcia de Loaisa was passed by the Streight of Magelan toward the Islands of cloues, he prouided three ships[2] to goe seeke him, and to discouer by that way of New Spaine as farre as the Isles of Maluco. There went as gouernour in those ships one Aluaro de Saavedra Ceron, cosen vnto Cortes, a man fit for that purpose. He made saile from Ciuatlanejo, now named S. Christopher, standing in 20 degrees toward the north, on All Saints day. They arrived at the islands which Magelan named The Pleasures: and from thence sailed to the islands which Gomes de Sequeira had discouered, and not knowing thereof, they named thē Islas de los Reyes, that is to say, The Isles of the kings, because they came vnto them on

Islas de los Reyes.

---

sul, a sam Miguel de Culuacam, que dizem estar de trinta graos pera cima.

Neste anno de 1527 sabēdo Fernam cortez polo petaxo, como frei Garcia de loais era passado ás ilhas do crauo, mandou fazer tres nauios prestes pera jrem em sua busca: & descobrir aquele caminho da noua Espanha ate Maluco, & hia por capitā mor delles Aluaro saiauedra Cerom seu primo, pessoa muyto pera isso, partio dia de todos os sanctos de Siuantaneio q' se agora chama sam Christouam que está em vinte graos da parte do norte: chegaram as ilhas q' o Magalhães pos nome dos prazeres: & dahi foram às que Gomez de sequeira descobrira, por nam saberem isto lhe poseram nome dos Reys pellas verem aquelle dia, aqui ficaram a Sayauedra dous nauios, de que nunca mais ouue noua nem recado, & de ilha em ilha foram ter a de Sarangam, onde resgataram dous

[1] Not in Portuguese. [2] He ordered three ships to be got ready.

Twelfe day. In the way Saavedra lost two ships of his company, of which they neuer after heard newes. But from island to island he still sailed and came to the Island of Candiga, where he bought two [or three] Spanyards for 70 ducats, which had beene of the companie of Frier Loaisa, who was lost thereabout. Candiga.

In the yeere 1528, in March, Saavedra arriued at the Islands of Maluco, and came to an anker before the Isle[1] of Gilolo : he found the sea calme and winde at will, without any tempests : and he tooke the distance from thence to Noua Spagna to be 2050[2] leagues. At this time Martin Yñiquez de Carquiçano died, and Fernando de la Torre was chosen their generall, who then was in the citie of Tidore, who had there erected a gallows and had fierce warre with Don George de Meneses, captaine of the Portugals : and in a fight which they had the fourth day of May, Saavedra tooke from him a galiotte and slew the captaine thereof, called Fernando de Baldaya, and in June[3] he returned [in his ship] towards New Spaine, hauing with him one Simon de Brito Patalin and other Portugals, and hauing[4] beene

---

ou tres Castelhanos por setenta cruzados, da companhia de Loais que se por aly perderam.

No anno de 1528 & mes de Março chegou Sayauedra as ylhas de Maluco, & surgio na ciũade de Grilolo, contaua como achara o mar limpo & vento a popa & sem tormenta, & que lhe parecia auer dali a noua Espanha mil & quinhentas legoas, & neste tempo era ja falecido o capitã Martim minquez de Carquiçano, & aleuantado por capitam Fernãdo dela torre, que estaua na cidade de Tidore com hũa forca feyta, & de crua guerra com dom Jorge de meneses capitam dos Portugueses : & na peleja que teueram a quatro de Mayo, lhe tomou Sayauedra hũa galeota, & matouo capitam della Fernam baldaya. E no mes de Julho tornou no seu nauio pera a noua Espanha, & com elle Simão de Brito Patalim,

---

[1] City. [2] 1500. [3] July. [4] Struggled.

certaine monethes at sea, he was forced backe vnto Tidore, where Patalin was beheaded (and quartered),[1] and his companions hanged [and quartered].

Gomara, hist. gen., lib. 2, cap. 73.

In this yeere 1528 Cortez sent two hundred footemen and 60 horsemen, and many Mexicans, to discouer and plant the countrey of the Chichimecas, for that it was reported to be rich of gold.[2] This being done he shipped himselfe, and came into Castile with great pompe, & brought with him 250,000[3] marks of gold and siluer: and being come to Toledo, where the emperour then lay, he was entertained according to his deserts, and the emperour made him Marques Del Valle, and married him to the Lady Jane de Zuniga, daughter vnto the Earle de Aguilar, and then the emperour sent him backe againe to be generall of New Spaine.

Gomara, hist. gen., lib. 2, cap. 72.

In the yeere 1529, in May, Saavedra returned back againe towards New Spaine, and he had sight of a land toward the south in two degrees, and he ran east along by it aboue fiue hundred leagues till the end of August [ac-

Noua Guinea.

& outros Portugueses, & depois de espancarem o mar algũs meses, se tornaram a Tidore, onde o Patalim foy degolado, & esquartejados, & enforcados, os que com elle hiam.

Nesta era de 1528 mandou Fernam Cortez dozentos soldados, sesenta caualos, & muitos Mexicanos, a descobrir, & pouoar as terras dos Chichimecas, por dizerem que eram ricas & boas: & partiose pera Castella com grande fausto & dozentos cincoenta marcos douro & prata. Chegado a Toledo õde o Emperador estaua, como pessoa grata fez lhe bõ gasalhado & o Marques del Valle o casou cõ dona Joana Destuniga, filha do cõde de Aguilar: & tornou oa mandar por capitam a noua Espanha.

No anno de 1529 & mes de Mayo tornou Sayauedra outravez pera a noua Espanha, & ouue vista de hũa costa da parte do Sul em dous graos daltura, foy em leste ao longo della mais de quin-

---

[1] Dele. [2] And good. [3] 250?

cording to their account]. The coast was cleane and of good ankerage, but the people blacke and of curled haire; from the girdle downward they did weare[1] a certaine thing plaited to couer their lower parts. The people of Maluco call them Papuas, because they be blacke and friseled in their hair: and so also do the Portugals call them [ ]. Noua Guinea. Os Papuas are blacke people with frisled haire.

[Alvaro] Saavedra hauing sailed 4 or 5 degrees to the south of the line, returned vnto it, and passed the equinoctiall towards the north, and discouered an island which he called Isla de los Pintados, that is to say, The Isle of painted people: for the people thereof be white, and all of them marked with an iron: and [according to all appearance] by the signes which they gaue he conceaued that they were of China. There came vnto them from the shore a kinde of boate[2] full of these men, making tokens of threatnings to the Spanyards; who seeing that the Spanyards would not Isla de los Pintados.

---

hētas legoas, te o fim D'Agosto: & segundo o q' della contauam era limpa & de bōs Surgidouros, & a gēte da terra preta, & cabello reuolto: traziā da cinta pera baixo huas faldas de penas, bem feytas, muyto coradas, com que cobriam suas vergonhas, & os Maluqueses chamā a estes homēs os Papuas por serem pretos de cabello frizado, & assi lhe chamam os Portugueses, pello tomarem delles.

Aluaro Sayauedra, como hia ao Sul quatro ou cinco graos affastado da linha, tornou a buscala, & passado aa outra banda do norte, descobrio hūa ylha, a q' pos nome das Pintadas, por serem homēs brancos, todos ferrados, & segundo o q' parecia, & sinais que dauam, deuiam alli de vir da China, donde sahio hum Parao a elles com grande oufania, ascenando que amainassem. Vendo que nam obedeciā, tiroulhes com hūa funda, & logo sahio hum golpe de Paraos da ylha a elles, todos fundeyros: & começaram hūa peleja com ho nauio, mais soberba & menos perigosa, que a de

---

[1] Skirts of feathers, well made of various colours.

[2] With great bravado, making signs that they should strike sail.

obey them, they began to skirmish with slinging of stones,[1] but Saavedra would suffer no shot to be shot at them, because their stones were of no strength, and did no harme.

Los Jardines.

A little beyond this island, in 10 or 12 degrees, they found many small low islands full of palme trees and grasse, which they called Los Jardines, and they came to an anker in the middest of them, where they taried certaine daies. The people seemed [from their carriage and complexion] to descend from them of China, but by reason of their long continuance there they become so brutish, that they haue neither law [nor religion], nor[2] yet giue themselues to any honest labour. They weare white clothing, which they make of grasse. They stand in maruailous feare of fire, because they neuer saw any. They eate cocos in steede of bread, breaking them before they be ripe, and putting them vnder the sand, and then after certaine daies they take them

---

Xeuena: pello que Sayauedra mandou mesurar a vella, & foy esperando sem lhe tirar nem fazer dano, ate que gastaram toda a meniçam que traziam.

Acima desta ylha em dez ou doze graos daltura, acharam muytas juntas, pequenas & rasas, cheas de palmeiras & verduras: pello q' lhe poseram nome bom Jardim, surgiram no meo dellas, onde esteueram algũs dias, os habitadores pareciam na feiçam & aluura descenderẽ da China, & pellos largos tempos que aueria que aly estauam, eram tam Barbaros que nam tinham ley, nem ceyta, nem criauam cousa viua. Vestiam panos brancos que faziã dêruas, espantaram se do fogo, porque nunca o viram: comiã por pão cocos, que antes que fossem maduros os cascauã, metiã nos de-

---

[1] And presently came out a number of canoes from the island towards them, all slingers; and they commenced a fight with the vessel, more furious, but less dangerous, than that of Xevena, at which Saavedra ordered the sail to be shortened, and went on slowly, without firing on them or doing them any mischief, until they had used all the ammunition they had brought.

[2] Do they bring up any living thing.

out and lay them in the sunne, and then they will open. They eate [raw] fish, which they take in a kinde of boate called a parao, which they make of pine wood, which is driuen thither at certaine times of the yeere, they know not how, nor from whence, and the tooles wherewith they make their boates are of shels of cockles, ——? or oysters. Flote wood.

Saavedra perceiuing that the time and weather was then somewhat better for his purpose, made saile towards the firme lande and [isthmus of the] citie of Panama [it being not more than seventeen or eighteen leagues across], where he might vnlade the cloues and marchandise which he had, that so in cartes it might be carried [across the plains] fower leagues, to the riuer of Chagre, which they say is nauigable, running out into the North sea not far from Nombre de Dios, where the ships ride which come out of Spaine: by which way all kinde of goods might be brought vnto them in shorter time, and with lesse danger, then to saile about the Cape of Bona Sperança. For from Maluco vnto Panama they saile continually betweene the Tropickes and the line: but they neuer found winde to serue that course:

---

baixo darea, & em certos dias os descobriam: & tanto q' lhe o sol daua se abriam. Tambē se mantinhā em peyxe cru, q' pescauā em Paraos, q' faziam de madeira de pinho, q' ali vinha ter em certo tempo, sem saber donde, & pera fazer a tal obra, era a ferramenta de cascas damejias, briguigões, ou hostras.

Vendo Sayauedra q' ho tempo era mais a seu proposito, se fez á vela na volta da terra & jsmo da cidade de Penama, por nā ser mais q' dezasete dezoyto legoas em largo, ōde podiā descarregar o crauo & mercadoria q' leuaua, & em carretas hiria per cāpinas iiij legoas, ate o rio Lagre, que dizē ser nauegauel & desemboca no mar do Norte, jūto de nōbre Dios, onde estā naos de Castella, q' os podiā leuar a elle em mais breue tēpo, & caminho menos perigoso que do cabo de boa esperança: porque de Maluco a Penama sempre vam por antre o Tropico em a linha, mas nunca poderam achar vento nem tempo pera comprir este desejo: pello que se

and therefore they came backe againe to Maluco very sad, because Saavedra died by the way:[1] who, if he had liued, meant to haue opened the land of Castillia de Oro and New Spaine from sea to sea. Which might have beene done in fower places: namely from the Gulfe of S. Michael to Vraba, which is 25 leagues, or from Panama to Nombre de Dios, being 17 leagues distance: or through Xaquator, a riuer of Nicaragua, which springeth out of a lake three or fower leagues from the South sea, and falleth into the North sea; whereupon doe saile great barks and crayers. The other place is from Tecoantepec through[2] a riuer to Verdadera Cruz in the Bay of the Honduras, which also might be opened in a streight. Which if it were done, then they might saile from the Canaries vnto the Malucos vnder the[3] climate of the zodiake, in lesse time and with much lesse danger, then to saile about the Cape de Bona Sperança, or by the streight of Magelan, or by the Northwest. And yet if there might be found a streight there to saile into the

Fower narrow passages from sea to sea in the West Indies. Gomara, hist. gen., lib. 4, cap. 14.

The northwest passage very beneficiall.

---

tornarão a Maluco assaz tristes, por Sayauedra ser falecido, do qual diziam que leuaua em proposito de fazer com o emperador, que mandasse abrir esta terra de Castella do ouro & noua Espanha de mar, a mar, porque se podia fazer por quatro lugares, que he do Golfam desam Miguel a Vraba, em que ha vinte & cinco legoas de trauesa, ou de Penama ao nombre de Dios, que ha dezasete, ou pello Sangra douro de Nicaraga, que começa em hũa alagoa tres ou quatro legoas da parte do sul, & vay sair a agoa della ao norte, por onde nauegam barcas, & nauios pequenos. Há outro passo de Tagante pera o rio da Vera Cruz, que tambem se podia abrir estreito, & se se fizesse, nauegar se hia das Canarias a Maluco por baixo do zodiaco clima temperada, & em menos tempo & com menos perigo, que pello cabo de Boa esperança nem estreito do

---

[1] Of whom it is said that he intended to arrange with the emperor that he should give orders to open, etc.

[2] The river of Vera Cruz.

[3] Zodiack in a temperate climate.

sea of China, as it hath beene sought (it would doe much good.)[1]

In this yeere 1529 one Damian de Goes, a Portugal, being in Flanders, after that he had trauailed ouer all Spaine, was yet desirous to see more countreyes, and fashions, and diuersities of people; and therefore went ouer into England and Scotland, and was in the courts of the kings [and of the principal persons] of those parts: and after that came againe into Flanders, and then trauailed through Zealand, Holland, Brabant [Guildres], Luxenburge, [to] Suitzerland, and so [along the riuer] through the cities of Colen, Spyres, Argentine, Basill, and other parts of Alemaine, and then came backe againe into Flanders: and from thence he went [a second time] into France through Picardie, Normandie, Champaine, Burgundie, the dukedome of Borbon, Gascoigne, Languedoc, Daulphinie, the dukedome of Sauoy, and [having visited the whole of beautiful France] passed into Italy into the dukedome of Millaine, Ferrara, Lombardie, and so to Venice, and turned backe againe to the territorie of

---

Magalhães, nem terra dos corte Reays, ainda que se nella achara estreito ao mar da China, como se ja buscara.

Neste anno de 1529 achando se Damiam de goes, Portugues em Frandes, depois de correr toda Espanha, desejoso de ver mais terra, costumes, trajos, diuersidades de gentes della, passou a Inglaterra, Escorcia, & esteue nas cortes dos Reys principaes, & senhores daquellas partes: & bem vistas se tornou ao condado de Frãdes, & correo todo em ho ducado de Salandia, Olanda, Barbante, Geldija, Lusamburg, Lotoringia, a Suycia, & ao longo do Rio às cidades de Costancia, Basilea, Argentina, Espiram, Voimatia, Maguueya, Colonia, & outras de baixa alemanha: donde tornou outra vez a Frandes, & entrou em França polla Picardia, Normandia, Gasconha, & foy ao ducado de Borbõ Lingado, o Dalfinado, & ducado de Saboya, & de Borgonha, Campania. Correo toda a bella França, passou a Italia, esteue no ducado de Milam, Fer-

[1] Not in Portuguese.

Genoa, and the dukedome of Florence, through all Tuscane: and he was in the citie of Rome, and in the kingdome of Naples, from the one side to the other.

From thence he went into Germanie to Vlmes, and other places of the empire, to the dukedome of Sueuia and of Bauier, and the archdukedome of Austrich, the kingdome of Bœme, the dukedome of Morauia, and the kingdome of Hungarie, and so to the confines of Græcia. From thence he went to the kingdome of Poland [Sarmatia], Prussia, and the dukedome of Liuonia, and so came into the great dukedome of Moscouia. From whence he came backe into High Alemayne, and through the countreyes of the Lantzgraue, the dukedome of Saxonie, the countreyes of [Dacier or] Denmarke, Gotland, and Norway, trauailing [through the greater parte of it] so farre, that he found himselfe in 70[1] degrees of latitude towards the north. He did see, speake, and was conuersant with all the kings, princes, nobles, and chiefe cities of all Christendome in the space of 22 yeeres [occupied in this work]:[2] so that by reason of the greatnes of his

---

rara, & por toda a Lombardia, foy a Veneza, tornou a ribeira de Genoua, & ducado de Florença com toda Toscana, & a cidade de Roma, Romania, & o Reyno de Napoles, dhũa parte & outra da Marinha.

Dahi se passou Alemanha, esteue na cidade de Vlma, & outras imperiaes, & no ducado de Sueuia, & de Bauaria, & Archeducado Daustria, Reyno de Boemia, ducado de Morauia, & no Reyno de Vngria: ate os Confinis da Grecia. Passou ao Reyno de Polonia, Sarmatia, Brusia, & ducado de Liuoni, chegou ao gram ducado de Moscouia, donde se tornou pella alta Alemanha, & terras de Lantgraue, ducado de Xaxonia, & Reino de Dacia, ou Dinamarcha, donde passou Agotia, Noruega, andou a mòr parte della, ate se poer em oytenta graos daltura, da parte do norte, vio, falou, conuersou com todos os Reis, principes, nobres, pouos de toda a Christandade, em vinte & dous annos q' gastou nestes trabalhos,

[1] 80?

[2] He traversed the greater part of Europe by his own free will, a

trauell, I thought him a man woorthie to be here remembred.

In the [same] yeere 1529 or 1530 one Melchior de Sosa Tauarez went from the citie of Ormuz vnto Balsera and the Islands of Gissara with certaine ships of warre, and passed vp [the Gulf of Persia] as farre as the place where the riuers Tygris and Euphrates meete one with the other. And although other Portugals had discouered and sailed through that streight, yet neuer any of them sailed so farre vpon the fresh water till that time, when he discouered [the shore of] that river from the one side to the other, wherein he saw many things which the Portugals[1] knew not.

Not long after this one Ferdinando Coutinho, a Portugall, came vnto Ormuz, and being desirous to see the world,[2] he determined to goe into Portugalls, from thence ouer land to see Asia and Europe. And to doe this the better he went

---

vio, & correo a môr parte de Europa, por suas liure vontade, cousa digna de louuor & memoria, pois deu luz a seu patria, de muitas cousas occultas a ella.

No anno mesmo de vinto & noue ou trinta, partio Belchior de sousa Tauares da cidade Dormuz pera Baçora, & ylhas de Gozara com certos nauios, em que ādaua darmada, pello estreito da Persia, & Rio Tygre, & Eufrates acima, ate onde se ajuntam hum cō ho outro: & ainda que outros Portugueses tiuessem descuberto & nauegado este estreito, nenhum foy tanto pella agoa doce acima, ate aquelle tempo, descobrindo aquella ribeira dūa parte & outra, em q' vio cousas que aos Espanhões não eram sabidas.

Despois disto nam muyto tempo, veio ter a Ormuz Fernam coutinho, desejoso de ver mundo, como ja auia tocado Africa, & a India, determinou de hir a Portugal por terra, & ver a môr parte

---

thing worthy of praise and remembrance, since he enlightened his country with many things unknown to her.

[1] Spaniards.

[2] As he had already visited Africa and India, determined to go to Portugal by land, and to see the greater part of Asia and Europe, and for this purpose he went to Arabia, Persia, etc.

into Arabia, Persia, and vpwards the riuer Euphrates the space of a moneth; and saw many kingdomes and countreies, which in our time had not beene seene (by the Portugals).[1] He was taken prisoner in Damasco, and afterward crost ouer the prouince of Syria, and came vnto the citie of Aleppo.[2] [It is said] He had beene at the holy Sepulchre in Jerusalem, and in the citie of Cayro, and at Constantinople with the Great Turke; and hauing seene his court [and the greater part of his country] he passed ouer vnto Venice, and from thence into Italie, France, Spaine, and so came againe to Lisbon. So that he and Damian de Goes were in our time the most noble Portugals, that had (discouered and)[3] seene most countreyes and realmes of their owne affections[4] [which, as a signal of a noble mind, I wanted here to relate with the names of the other discoverers and navigators.]

Gomara, hist. gen., lib. 5, cap. 3.

In the same yeere 1530, little more or lesse, one Francis Pizarro, which had been in Spaine to obtaine the gouernment of Peru, turned backe againe to the citie of Panama

---

Dasia, Europa, & pera isso diz q' foy Arabia Persia, & pollo rio Eufrates acima hum mes de caminho, & vio muitos reynos: & senhorios que em nossos tempos nam eram vistos, foy aa cidade de Lepe, atrauessou a prouincia da Suria: em Damasco ho prenderam, & diz que esteue na casa Santa de Hierusalem, & na cidade do Cairo, na de Constantinopla, com ho grande Turco, & depois de visto sua corte, & a mór parte de sua terra, foy ter aa cidade de Veneza: & visto Italia, França, Espanha, veo ter aa cidade de Lisboa, aszi q' elle & Damiam de goes foram em nossos tempos os mais nobres Portugueses & os que mais prouincias & terras viram por suas liures vontades: que he sinal de nobre pensamento, quis aqui com os mais descobridores & nauegadores que tenho apontados declarar.

No mesmo āno de 1530 pouco mais ou menos tornou Francisco Piçarro que em Espanha andaua, sobre a gouernança de Peru, aa

---

[1] Not in Portuguese.
[2] Transposed from Portuguese.
[3] Not in Portuguese.
[4] By their own free will.

with all things[1] that he desired: he brought with him fower brethren [bastards], Ferdinand, John, Gonzaluo, and Francis Martines de Alcantara. They were not well receiued by Diego de Almagro and his friends, for that Pizarro had not so much commended him to the emperour as he looked for, but omitted the discouerie, wherein he had lost one of his eies, and spent much: yet in the end they agreed, and Diegro de Almagro gaue vnto Pizarro 700 pezoes of golde, victuailes and munition, wherewith he prepared himselfe the better for his iourney.

Not long after this agreement Francis Pizarro and his brethren went in two ships with the most[2] of their soldiers and horses [as possible]; but he could not arriue at Tumbez as he was minded [on account of contrary winds], and so they went on land in the riuer of Peru; and went along the coast with great paines, because there were many bogs and riuers in their way, wherein some of his men were drowned [they being swollen]. They came to the towne of Coaché [which is well prouided], where they rested, where they

---

cidade de Perama, com ella como desejaua. Trazia con sigo quatro irmãos bastardos, Fernando, Johã, Gonçalo Piçarro, Francisco martīz dalcantara. Nam foram bem recebidos de Diogo dalmagro, & seus amigos, por nam fazer delles tanta mençam ao Emperador como deuera, nem ho meteo na gouernança & descobrimento, em q' Diogo dalmagro perdeo hum olho, & fez muyto gasto. Mas por fim de tudo se concertaram, & Diogo dalmagro lhe deu seet cētos pesos douro, vitualhas, armas com que se apercebeo pera ho caminho.

Partio logo Frācisco piçarro & seus hirmãos em dous nauios, cō os mais soldados & caualos que poderam, teue ventos contrarios pera chegar a Tumbes como era seu proposito, desembarcaram no Rio de Peru, foram ao longo da costa, com muyto trabalho, por ser baixa alagadiça de muytas ribeiras, onde se algūs afogaram por serem crecidos, chegaram à villa de Cos, q' he bem prouida,

[1] That which. As many.

Much gold and emeraulds.

found much gold and emeraulds, of which they brake some to see if they were perfect. From thence Pizarro sent to Diego de Almagro twenty thousand[1] pezos of gold to send him men, horses, munition, and victuailes; and so he went on his iourney to the hauen named Porto Viejo: and thither came vnto him one Sebastian de Benalcazar, with all such things as he had sent for, which pleased and pleasured him very much.

Gomara, hist. gen., lib. 5, cap. 4. The Isle of Puna.

In the yeere 1531,[2] he hauing this aide, passed ouer into a rich island called Puna, where he was well receiued of the gouernour: yet at last [Pizarro having offended him] he conspired to kill him and all his men: but Pizarro preuented him, and tooke many of the Indians, and bound them with chaines of gold and siluer. The gouernour[3] caused those that kept his[4] wiues to haue their noses, armes, and priuie members to be cut off, so jealous was he.[5] Here Pizarro found aboue sixe hundred men prisoners belonging to the king Attabalipa, who waged warre against his eldest

Gomara, hist. gen., lib. 5, cap. 5.

---

onde descansarã, auia ahi muyto ouro, & esmeraldas: quebrarã dellas por ver se eram verdadeiras: daqui mandou Francisco piçarro a Diogo dalmagro mil pesos douro, pera que lhe mandasse gente, caualos, armas, vitualhas, elle foy seu caminho ao porto velho, onde chegou Sebastiam de benalcacere com tudo ho que pediam, que os alegrou muyto.

No anno da era de quinhentos & cincoenta & tres, vendo Francisco piçarro tam bom socorro, passouse a hũa ylha rica, que se chama Puna, onde foy bẽ recebido do gouernador della, mas por lhe fazer offensa, determinou matalo, com quantos leuaua, ouue Piçarro victoria, ainda que os Indios com feros douro & prata. Os principaes desta ylha, mandauam cortar narizes, braços, membros a os que guardauam suas molheres, tam ciosos eram: achou aqui

---

[1] One thousand?

[2] The date in the Portuguese (1553) must be an error.

[3] Chiefs of that island. [4] Their. [5] Were they.

brother Guascar. [And] to winne reputation, these he set at libertie, and sent them to the citie of Tombez (who promised to be a meane that he should be well receiued in those partes).[1] But when they saw themselues out of bondage, they forgat their promise, and incited the people against the Spaniards.[2] Then Pizarro sent three Spaniards to Tombez to treate for peace, whome they tooke and slew and sacrificed, and their priestes wept not for pitie but of custome. Pizarro hearing of this cruell fact, passed ouer to the maine, and set vpon the citie [to take vengeance for the injury wrought upon his people] one night suddenly and[3] killed many of them, so that they presented him with gifts of gold and siluer and other riches, and so became friends. This done, he builded a towne vpon the riuer of Cira, and called it Saint Michael of Tangarara, which was the first towne inhabited by Christians in those partes; whereof Sebastian de Benalcazar was appointed captaine. Then he

S. Michael of Tangarara.

Piçarro mais de seis centos homẽs presos del rey Atabaliba, de q' soube ter guerra com seu irmão Gascar mais velho, & nã lhe pesou nada, & por cobrar fama, mãdou os aa cidade de Tumbos: mas como se lá viram, disseram quẽ os Barbados erã & como tomauam tudo por força, mandou lá Piçarro tres Castelhanos a pedir pazes, foram mortos, & sacrificados, & os sacerdotes que isto faziam diz que chorauam, nam tãto por piedade, como por ser assi costume.

Sabendo Francisco piçarro isto, passouse á terra firme, pos se sobre a cidade por tomar vingãça da offensa que aos seus fora feyta, estando os immigos de noite descuydados, matou muitos, deram lhe presentes douro, prata, & outras riquezas que auia na terra, ficaram amigos & em Tangara, Ribeira de Choya, edificaram hũa cidade, a que poseram nome sam Miguel de tangara q' foy a primeira pouoaçam de Christãos naquella terra capitam & tenente

---

[1] Not in Portuguese.

[2] But when they arrived there, they described the bearded ones or Spaniards as men who took all by force.

[3] And the enemy being careless at night, he.

Payta an excellent harbour in 5 degrees to the south of the line.

searched out a good and sure hauen for his ships, and found that of Payta to be an excellent harbour.[1]

Gomara, historiæ general. lib. 3, cap. 37.

In this same yeere 1531, there went one Diego de Ordas[2] to be gouernour in the riuer of Maragnon, with three ships, sixe hundred soldiers, and 36 horses. He died by the way, so that the intention came to none effect. After that (in the yeere 1534)[3] there was sent thither one Hierome Artel[4] with 130 soldiers, yet he came not to the riuer, but peopled Saint Michael de Neueri, and other places in Paria. Also there went vnto this riuer Maragnon a Portugall gentleman named Aries Dacugna, and he had with him ten ships, nine hundred Portugals, and 130 horses. He spent much [so that those who fitted out the expedition were great losers], but he that lost most was one John de Barros [factor of the "casa da India," who being noble and of condition payed largely for Ayres da Cunha and others who died there, out of pity towards their wives and children who were left.] This riuer standeth in three degrees toward the south, hauing at the entrance of it 15 leagues of breadth and many islands inha-

The famous riuer Maragnon.

John de Barros, factor of the house of India.

---

della Sebastiam de benalcacere, & mandaram os nauios ao porto de Paeta por ser mais seguro.

Neste mesmo anno de 1531 foy por gouernador ao Rio Maranho Diogo de sordas: cõ tres naos & seis centos soldados, trinta & seis caualos, faleceo no caminho, por onde nã teue seu desejo effecto, depois foy la mandado Hieronimo fortal com cento & trinta companheyros. Nã chegou ao rio, pouvou sam Miguel de neuery & outros lugares. Foy tambẽ a este rio Maranho hum fidalgo Portugues que se chamaua Aires da cunha, leuou dez nauios, noue centos Portugueses, cẽto & trinta caualos: fez grande gasto, em que se perderam os que armaram, & o que mais perdeo nisso foy Joã de Barros feitor da casa da India, que por ser nobre & de condiçam larga pagou por Ayres da cunha, & outros que la falceram com piedade de molheres filhos q' lhe ficaram, & dizem q' este rio

[1] The ships were sent to the port of Paita for greater safety.
[2] Sordas ? [3] Not in Portuguese. [4] Fortal.

bited, (wherein grow trees that beare)[1] incence of a greater bignes then in Arabia, gold, rich stones, and one emeraud was found there as big as the palme of a mans hand. The people of the countrey [said that higher up the river were rocks, and they] make their drinke of a kinde of dates, which are as big as quinces.

In the yeere 1531 one Nunnez de Gusman went from the citie of Mexico towards the north-west to discouer and conquer the countreies of Xalisco, Ceintiliquipac, Ciametlan, Toualla, Quixco, Ciamolla, Culhuacan, and other places. And to doe this he caried with him 250 horses, and fiue hundred soldiers. He went through the countrey of Mechuacan, where he had much gold, ten thousand marks of siluer, and 6000 Indians to carrie burdens. He [discouered and] conquered many countreyes, called that of Xalisco Nueua Galicia, because it is a ragged countrey, and the people strong. He builded a citie which he called Compostella, and another named Guadalajara, because he was borne in the citie of Guadalajara in Spaine. He likewise builded the townes de Santo Espirito (de la Conception),[1]

Gomara, hist. gen., lib. 6, cap. 16.

Nueua Galicia.

Compostella.

Guadalajara.

Santo Espirito, De la conception.

esta em tres graos da parte do sul, em que terá em boca quinze legoas, & muitas ilhas pouoadas, encenso mais crecido que o de Arabia, ouro, pedraria, & que se achara hũa esmeralda como hũa palma, & diziam os da terra que pella ribeira acima auia rocas, & que faziam aqui vinho de tamaras como marmelos.

Nesta era de 1531 foy Nuno de Guzmão da cidade de Mexico contra o Norte, descobrir & conquistar Xalisco, Suntelipac, Chamelam, Tanola, Quisco, Chimola, Huluacam. E leuou pera ysso dozentos & cinquẽta caualos & quinhẽtos soldados, passou por Mexuacão, onde ouue muito ouro, dez mil marcos de prata, seys mil Indios pera carrega. Descobrio & conquistou muita terra, pos nome a de Xalisco noua Galiza, por ser regiam aspera, & de gente esforçada, pouoou Compustella, Guadalajara por ser natural della, & has villas do Spirito sancto, Sam Miguel de Saluaçam, que

[1] Not in Portuguese.

San Miguel. and de San Miguel [de Salvacam], standing in 34 degrees of northerly latitude.

Gomara, hist. gen., lib. 2, cap. 74. In the yeere 1532 Ferdinando Cortes sent one Diego Hurtado de Mendoça vnto Acapulco, 70 leagues from Mexico, where he had prepared a small fleete to discouer the coast of the South sea as he had promised the emperour. And finding two ships readie, he went into them, and sailed [westward] to the hauen of Xalisco, where he would haue taken in water and wood: but Nunnez de Gusman caused him to be resisted, and so he went forward: but some of his men mutinied against him, and he put them all into one of the ships, and sent them backe into New Spaine. They wanted water, and going to take some in the bay of the Vanderas, the Indians killed them. But Diego Hurtado sailed 200 leagues along the coast, yet did nothing woorth the writing.

Gomara, hist. gen., lib. 5, cap. 6, 7, & 8. In the yeere 1533 Francis Pizarro went from the citie of Tumbes to Caxamalca, where he tooke the king Attabalipa, who promised for his ransome much gold and siluer: and to

---

dizem estar em trinta & quatro graos daltura da mesma banda do Norte.

No anno de 1532 mandou Fernã cortez Diogo furtado de mendoça a Capulco cento & vinte legoas de Mexico, onde mãdaua fazer armadas pera descobrir a costa da banda do Sul, como cõ o Emperador tinha assentado, achou Diogo furtado dous nauios prestes, meteose nelles. Foy ao ponente ao porto Xalisco, onde quisera tomar agoa & lenha, Nunho de guzmão mandou defenderlha, passou diante, amotinou selhe algũa gẽte, meteos ẽ hũ dos nauios, enviou os á noua Espanha, teuerã falta dagoa, sayrã a tomala na baia das bãdeiras, os Indios os mataram, Diogo furtado andou bem dozentos legoas ao longe da costa, sem fazer cousa que de contar seja.

No anno de 1533 partio Francisco piçarro da cidade de Tumbez pera Xamalca, onde prendeo el Rey Tabaliba, que prometeo por si muyto ouro, & prata, & pera isso foram a cidade de Cusco, que diz

accomplish it they went to the citie of Cusco standing in 17 degrees on the south side [principal city of that country], Peter de Varco,[1] and Ferdinand de Sotto (who)[2] discouered that iourney,[3] being 200 leagues, all causies of stone, and bridges well made of it, and from one iourney to another, lodgings made for the Yngas: for so they call their kings. Their armies are very great and monstrous. For they bring aboue an hundred thousand fighting men to the field. They lodge vpon these causies;[4] and haue their prouision sufficient and necessarie, after the vse and custome of China (as it is[5] said). [This people appear to be all of one descent.] Ferdinando Pizarro with some horsemen went vnto Paciacama, 100 leagues from Caxamalca, and discovered that prouince: and comming backe he vnderstood how Guascar, brother to Attabalipa, was by his commandement killed, and how that his captaine Ruminaguy rose vp in armes with the citie of Quito. After this Attabalipa was by the commandement of Pizarro strangled.[6]

Guacas slaine. Gomar, hist. gen., lib. 5, cap. 11.

Attabalipa strangled.

---

que estaa em dezasete graos da parte do Sul, cabeça daquelle imperio, Pero daluarado, & Fernam do souto, descobriram aquella terra & caminho, em que auia dozentas legoas, todas calçadas de pedra, & pontes bem feytas dellas; & de jornada em jornada, aposentos pera os Inguas, que assi chamão la aos Reys, & seus exercitos, cousa monstruosa: por q' leuariam mais de cem mil homēs de guerra, & tudo se nestes paços aposentauam, & tinham mantimento & o necessario em abastança, ao costume da China (como ja disse). Esta gente parece toda dūa costa. Piçarro co algūs de caualo foy a Pachacoma, cem legoas de Caxamalca, descobrio aquella prouincia, & tornado soube como Guascar, hirmão de Tabaliba, era por seu mandado morto, & seu capitam Reymmegay aleuantado com a cidade de Quito, & Atabaliba depois disto, foy por mandado de Piçarro degolado.

---

[1] D'Alvarado. [2] Dele. [3] Country and route.
[4] And all are lodged in these buildings.
[5] As has been already. [6] Beheaded ?

In the yeere 1534 Francis Pizarro, seeing that the two kings were gone, began to enlarge himselfe in his signiories, and to build cities, forts, and townes, to haue them more in subiection. Likewise he sent Sebastian de Benalcazar, the captaine of S. Michael of Tangarara, against Ruminaguy vnto Quito. He had with him two hundred footemen and 80 horsemen. He went discouering and conquering 120 leagues from the one citie to the other, east, not farre from the equinoctiall line:[1] where Peter Aluarado found mountaines full of snow, and so cold, that 70[2] of his men were frosen to death. When he came vnto Quito, he began to inhabite it, and named it S. Francis. In this countrey there is plentie of wheate, barlie, cattell and plants of Spaine, which is very strange [and not to be expected under the line]. Pizarro went straight to the citie of Cusco, and found by the way the captaine Quisquiz (risen in armes, whome shortly he defeated).[3] About this time there came vnto him a brother of Attabalipa named Mango, whom he made ynga or king of the country [by that means quieting a great part

Gomara, historiæ general. lib. 5, cap. 18.

Cruell snow vnder the line. Gomara, historiæ general. lib. 5, cap. 19. Gomara, hist. gen., lib. 5, cap. 16.

No anno de 1534 Vendo Francisco piçarro estes dous Reys fora do mundo, comẽçouse a estender por seu senhorio, & a fazer nelle forças, cidades, villas pello ter mais sojecto, & mandou logo Sebastiam de Benalcacer, que por capitam em S. Miguel de Tangara estaua, contra Remuregai a Quito, leuou dozentos de pee & oytenta de cauallo, foy descobrindo & conquistandos aquellas cento & vinte legoas, que ha dũa cidade a outra contra o leuante ao longo da linha, onde acharam serras neuadas: & tam frias que se enregelauam algũas pessoas. Chegado a Quito: comẽçou a pouoalo, & pos lhe nome sam Franciso, diz que se da nesta terra muito trigo, ceuada, gados, plantas de Castella, cousa espantosa de que se nam esperaua debaixo da linha. Francisco piçarro partio logo a cidade de cusco, & achou no caminho aleuantando o capitam Quisquis, mas veo a elle hum hirmão de Atabaliba que se

[1] Towards the east along the line.

[2] Several.

[3] Not in Portuguese.

of the countrey]. (Thus marching forward on his iourney after certaine skirmishes he tooke that exceeding rich and wealthie citie of Cusco.)[1] Cusco taken.

In this same yeere 1534 a Briton,[2] called Jaques Cartier, with three ships, went to the land of Corterealis, and the Bay of Saint Laurence, otherwise called Golfo Quadrato, and fell in 48 degrees and an halfe towards the north; and so he sailed till he came vnto 51 degrees, hoping to haue passed that way to China, and to bring thence drugs and other marchandise[3] into France. The next yeere after he made another voiage into those partes, and found the countrey abounding with victuailes, houses, and good habitations,[4] with many and great riuers. He sailed in one riuer toward the southwest 300 leagues, and named the countrey thereabout Noua Francia: at length finding the water fresh he perceiued he could not passe through to the South sea (and hauing wintered in those parts, the next yeere following)[5] he returned into France. The Bay of S. Laurence discouered.

In the yeere 1534, or in the beginning of the yeere 1535,

---

chamaua Mango, que elle fez Ingua & Rey da terra, com que pacificou grande parte della.

Neste mesmo anno de 1534 diz que foy hũ Frances chamado Jaques cartiel, cõ tres galeões á terra dos Cortes Reais, & Golfam quadrado tomaua em quarenta [oito ?] graos da banda do Norte: foy por ella ate cincoenta & hum por ver se achaua saida á outra banda da China, & trazer della a França as especearias, & drogas das Indias: & segundo contauam a terra era abastada de mantimentos, casas, & bem pouoada, q' auia nellas muitas & grandes ribeiras, & que foram por hũa contra o ponente trezentas legoas, poseram lhe nome a Noua França: & como agoa era doçe bem viram que nam atrauessava a outra parte pello que se tornaram.

Neste anno de 1534 ou na entrada de quinhentos & trinta &

---

[1] Not in Portuguese. [2] Frenchmen. [3] Spice.
[4] Well peopled. [5] Not in Portuguese.

Gomar., hist. gen., lib. 2. cap. 74, & lib. 2, cap. 98.

Don Antonie de Mendoça came vnto the citie of Mexico as viceroy of New Spaine. In the meane while Cortes was gone for more men to continue his discouerie, which immediately he set in hand, sending foorth two ships [towards the west] (from Tecoantepec)[1] which he had made readie. There went as captaines in them Fernando de Grijalua, and Diego Bererra de Mendoça, and for pilots there went a Portugal named Acosta, and the other Fortunio Ximenez, a Biscaine. [Making sail they went forth to discover the secrets of those coasts.] The first night they deuided themselues.[2] Fortunio Ximenez killed his captaine Bezerra and hurt many of his confederacie: and then he went on land to take water and wood in the Bay of Santa Cruz, but the Indians there slue him, and aboue 20 of his companie. Two mariners (which were in the boate escaped, and)[3] went [in a small boat] vnto Xalisco, and told Nunnes de Gusman that they had found tokens of pearles: he went into the ship, and so went to seeke the pearles, he discouered along the coast aboue 150 leagues. They said that Ferdinando de

Plaia de Santa Cruz.

---

cinco chegou dom Antonio de mendoça à cidade de Mexico, por Visorey da noua Espanha & era ja partido Fernã cortez catar gente pera continar seu descobrimento, & mandou logo a ella contra ocidente dous nauios que achou acabados, & capitães dellas Fernam de grijaluarez, & Diogo bezerra de mẽdoca, & pilotos hum Portugues que se dizia da costa, & do outro Furtum Ximenez Biscainho. Dadas as vellas foram descobrindo os secretos daquellas ribeiras, & apartados hum do outro, Furtũ ximenes matou o capitam Bezerra & feriram os de sua valia, & deitados em terra tomou agoa & lenha na Baya de Sancta Cruz, onde os Indios ho mataram com vinte & tantos companheyors: & dous marinheyros foram no batel a Xalisco, & dixeram a Nuno de guzman como acharam mostras de perolas, meteose no nauio, foy buscalas: descobrio por esta costa mays de cento & cincoenta legoas, Fernam de Grijal-

---

[1] Not in Portuguese. [2] And separated one from the other. [3] Dele.

Grijalua sailed three hundred leagues (from Tecoantepec)[1] without seeing any land, but only one island, which he named the Isle of Saint Thomas, because he came vnto it on that saints day: it standeth in 20[2] degrees of latitude. The Isle of S. Thomas.

In this yeere 1535 Pisarro builded the citie de los Reyes vpon the riuer of Lima. The inhabitants of Xauxa went to dwell there, because it was a better country, standing in 12 degrees of southerly latitude. In this same yeere of 1535 he caused the citie of Truxillo to be builded on a riuers side vpon a fruitfull soile, standing in 8 degrees on that side. He built also the citie of Saint Jago in Porto Viejo: besides many others along the sea coast and within the land: where there breede many horses [mares], asses, [baggage] mules, kine, hogs, goates, sheepe, and other beasts; also trees and plants, but principally rosemary,[3] oranges, limons, citrons, and other sower fruits [vineyards], vines, wheate, barlie, and other graines [cabbages], radishes [pot herbs], and other [things] (kinde of herbage and fruits)[4] brought out of Spaine (thither to be sowne and planted).[4] Lima builded. Gomar., hist. geu., lib. 4, cap. 92. Lib. 5, cap. 23. Truxillo. S. Jago de Porto viejo.

---

uarez diz que andou trezentas sem ver terra, se nam hũa ylha a que poz nome de sam Thomas, pella descobrir em tal dia, & que estaua em dezanoue graos daltura.

No anno de 1535 fundou Francisco piçarro aa cidade dos Reys, na ribeira de Lima, passou a ella os vezinhos de Xauxa, por ser melhor terra esta da parte do sul em doze graos daltura. Neste mesmo anno de cincoenta,[5] edificou a cidade de Trogilho, ao longo dũa ribeira, terra fresca, em oyto graos da mesma banda, & assi foy feyta a cidade de Santiago, em porto velho & outros muytos ao longo do mar, polla terra dentro: em que se criam muytos caualos, egoas, asnos; azemelas, vacas, porcos, cabras, ouelhas, & outras alimarias, & assi aruores & outras prantas, principalmẽte romeyras, laranjas, limões, sidras, & outras fruytas agras, vinhas, parreiras, trigo, ceuada, grãos, couues, rabãos, ortaliça, & outras cousas q' leuaram d'Espanha.

---

[1] Not in Portuguese. [2] 19. [3] Pomegranates. [4] Dele.
[5] Trinta e cinco ?

Gomara, hist. gen., lib. 5, cap. 24.

In the same yeere 1535 one Diego de Almagro went from the citie of Cusco to the prouinces of Arequipa and

Chili.

Chili, reaching [upwards] (beyond Cusco)[1] towards the south vnto 30 degrees. This voiage was long, and he discouered much land, suffering great hunger, cold, and other extremities, by reason of the abundance of [snow and] ice, which stoppeth the running of the riuers [at least after sunset, while at midday they melt]; so that men and horses die in those parts of the colde.[2] About this time Ferdinando Pisarro came out of Spaine to the citie de los Reyes, and brought with him the title of marquisate of Atanillos for his brother Francis Pisarro, and vnto Diego de Almagro he brought the gouernment of 100 leagues ouer and besides

Lib. 5, cap. 25.

that which was discouered, and named it The New kingdome of Toledo. Ferdinando Pisarro went straight to the citie of Cusco: and one John de Rada went to Almagro into Chili with the emperours patents.

Lib. 7, cap. 17.

Diego de Almagro hauing receiued the letters patents which the emperour had sent him, went straight from Chili

---

No mesmo anno da era de mil & quinhentos & vinte[3] cinco, foy Diogo Dalmagra da cidade de Cusco pera aas prouincias de Ariquipa, Chily que estam daly pera cima da parte do Sul ate trezentos graos daltura, & neste caminho por ser comprido, descobriram muita terra, passaram muyta fome, frio, trabalho, grandes neues, & geadas, que ha tantas naquellas partes: que dizem que os Rios nam correm se nam depois do Sol fora, & alto dia que as derrete, pella qual causa lhe morreram muitos caualos & homēs enregelados. Neste meio tempo chegou Fernam piçarro a cidade dos Reys de Castella & trazia o marquesado de Tuuilhos a seu jrmaō Francisco piçarro, & a Diogo dalmagro a gouernança de çem legoas, alē do descuberto a que poseram nome o Nouo reyno de Toledo, foy logo Fernam piçarro pera à cidade de Cusquo, & Joam de Rada a Chily [onde?]. Almagro estaua com as pro-

---

[1] Dele. [2] Frozen. [3] Trinta?

vnto Cusco, to haue it, seeing[1] it did appertaine vnto him. Which was the cause of a ciuill warre. They were mightily oppressed with want of victuailes and other things in this their returne,[2] and were enforced to eate the horses, which had died fower moneths and a halfe before, when they passed that way [and it is said they were as fresh as when they died].

In this same yeere 1535, Nunnez Dacuña being gouernour of India, while he was making a fortresse at the citie of Diu, he sent a fleete to the riuer of Indus, being frō thence 90 or 100 leagues towards y^e^ north vnder the Tropicke of Cancer. The captaines name was Vasques Perez de San Paio: also he sent another armie against Badu the king of Cambaia, the captaine whereof was Cosesofar, a renegado. They came to the barre of that mighty riuer in the moneth of December, of the water whereof they found such trial[3] as Quintus Curtius writeth of it, when Alexander [the Great] came thither.

The fortresse of Diu.

Badu, king of Cambaia.

---

uisões que lhe o Emperador mandaua, ho qual se partio logo de Chily a Cusco pera tomalo, dizendo que lhe pertencia, de que se começou naquella parte a guerra ciuil, nam lhe faltaram fomes & frios, como á yda, ate comerem os caualos, que auia quatro meses q' lhe morreram quādo por aly passaram, & diz que estauam tā frescos como se entam os mataram.

No mesmo anno de 1535 fazendo Nuno dacunha gouernador da India a fortaleza da cidade de Dio, mandou hūa armada ao Rio Indio, que estava della nouenta, ou cem legoas contra o Norte debaxo do Tropico de Cancro, & era capitam della Vasco pirez de Sampayo, & assi hia outra armada do Badu Rey de Cambaya, que era capitam Cojeçofar arrenegegado. Chegaram á barra daquelle gram Rio no mes de Dezembro: & contaua o mesmo daquella terra & agoa que Quinto Curcio deixou escripto quando o grande Alexandre ali chegara.

[1] Saying. [2] Journey.

[3] And related the same of that land and river as, etc.

Gomara, historiæ general. lib. 2, cap. 61.

In this yeere 1535 one Simon de Alcazaua went from Siuill with two ships and 240 Spaniards in them. Some say they went to New Spaine, others that they went to Maluco, but others also say to China, where they had beene with Ferdinando Perez de Andrada. Howsoeuer it was, they went first vnto the Canaries, and from thence to the streight of Magelan, without touching at the land of Brasill or any part at all of that coast. They entred into the streight in the moneth of December with contrarie windes and cold weather. The soldiers would haue had him turne backe againe, (but he would not).[1] He went into an hauen on the south side in 53:[2] there the captaine Simon of Alcazaua commanded Roderigo de Isla with 60 Spanyards to goe and discouer land: but they rose vp against him, and killed him, and appointed such captaines and officers as pleased them, and returned. Comming thwart of Brasil they lost one of their ships vpon the coast, and the Spanyards that escaped drowning were eaten by the sauages. The other ship went

---

Neste anno de 1535 partio Simço Dalcaçoua cõ duas naos de Seuilha, dozentos q'rẽta castelhanos nellas. Hũs dizem q' hiam pera a noua Espanha, outros querem dizer q' pera Maluco, outros â China, onde ja esteueram com Fernam perez Dandrade: como quer q' seja foram às Canarias, dahi atrauessaram ao estreito que Magalhães tinha descuberto, sem tocar na terra do Brasil & toda sua costa. Entraram o estreito no mes de Dezembro com tempo contrario, & frio: diz que lhe requereram os soldados que se tornasse pera fora, meteo se em hũ porto da parte do Sul em quarenta & cinco graos daltura, donde mandou Simão Dalcaçoua o capitã Rodrigo de Hisla com sessenta Castelhanos descobrir terra, & elles se amotinaram & o prenderã & tomaram as naos, & mataram Simão Dalcaçoua, & poseram capitães officiaes quem quiseram, no Brasil deram cõ hũa nao á costa, os da terra os comeram. A outra nao

[1] Not in Portuguese.

[2] From what follows, and if the latitude 45 written in the Portuguese is correct, it seems that he did return.

to Saint Jago in Hispaniola, and from thence to Ciuill in Spaine.

In this same yeere 1535 Don Pedro de Mendoça went from Cadiz towards the riuer of Plate with twelue ships [the largest and finest vessels that euer went to those parts], and had with him two thousand men: (which was the greatest number of ships and men that euer any captaine carried into the Indies).[1] He died by the way returning homewards. The most part of his men remained in that riuer, (and builded a great towne containing now about two thousand houses, wherein great store of Indians dwell with the Spanyards).[2] They discouered and conquered[3] the countrey till they came to the mines of Potossi and to the towne La Plata [by which the Spaniards of Peru with those of this river, and it is said that more than 600 leagues were discovered by other fleets that ascended the river] (which is 500 leagues distant from them).[4] Gomara, historiæ general, lib. 3, cap. 39. The riuer of Plata runneth vp to Potossi.

In the yeere 1536 Cortes [being at Tagantepec] vnder-

---

de que era capitão Rodrigo de Hisla, & vinha hum filho de Simão Dalcaçoua, foy ter á cidade de Santiago da ylha Espanhola, & dahi a Seuilha.

Neste mesmo anno de 1535 partio dõ Pedro de Mendoça de Calex pera o Rio da prata com doze naos, as mayores & melhores que nunca foram aquellas partes, leuaua dous mil homẽs, por hir mal desposto tornou se, mas faleceo no caminho, & ficou no Rio a mòr parte da gente, q' foy por elle dentro descobrindo, conquistando, & pouoando ate chegar ás minas de Patoci, & villa da prata: por onde se comunicam os Castelhanos de Peru com os deste Rio, & diz q' tem descuberto mais de seis centas legoas com ajuda doutras armadas que foram a este Rio & por elle dentro.

Dizem que no anno de 1536 estando Fernã Cortez em Tagante-

---

[1] Dele.
[2] Not in Portuguese.
[3] They went up the river discovering and conquering, etc.
[4] Not in Portuguese.

Gomara, hist. gen., lib. 2, cap. 74 & 98.]

standing that his ship (wherein Fortunio Ximenez was pilote)[1] was seased on by Nunnez de Guzman, he sent foorth three ships [which he had prepared at Chimalam] to the place where Guzman was, and he himselfe went by land well accompanied, and found the ship which he sought all spoiled and rifled. When his three other ships were come about, he went aboord himselfe with the most part of his men and horses, leauing for captaine of those which remained on land one Andrew de Tapia. So he set saile, and comming to a point the first day of May he called it Saint Philip, and an island that lieth fast by it he called Sant Jago. Within three daies after he came into the bay where the pilot Fortunio Ximenez was killed, which he called La Plaia de Santa Cruz, where he went on land, and commanded Andrew de Tapia to discouer.[2] Cortes [having given him time to arive] tooke shipping againe and came to the riuer now called Rio de San Pedro y San Paulo, where by a tempest the ships were separated, one was driuen to

Sant Jago Isle.

La plaia de Santa Cruz.

Rio de San Pedro y San Paulo.

---

pee, soube como a sua nao era por Nuno de Guzmão tomada, despachou tres nauios que acabados tinha pera Chimalão a onde Guzmão estaua, & foy se por terra bem acompanhado, & achou a sua nao roubada, & a traues deitada. Chegados os tres nauios que mandara embarcou se nelles com a mais gente & cauallos que pode, deixando por capitão dos que sobejara Andres de Tapia. Dada a vela foy tomar hũa ponta ho primeiro dia de Mayo, & por isso lhe pos nome Felipe, & hũa ylheta que ahi está perto Santiago. Dahi a tres dias entrou na baya, em que mataram o piloto Furtum ximenes, & chamou Sancta Cruz, sahio em terra mandou ali vir Audres de Tapia por ser bõ porto, & descobrir a terra dentro. Cortez embarcado deu lhe hum tempo, foy ter a dous Rios q' se agora chamã sam Pedro & Paulo, carregou tanto vento, que se apartaram hũs nauios dos outros, & foy hum ter à baya de Sãta

[1] Not in Portuguese.

[2] To come there, it being a safe harbour, and to discover the country inland.

the bay de Santa Cruz, another to the riuer of Guajaual, and the third was driuen on shore hard by Xalisco, and the men thereof went by land to Mexico. Guajaual Rio.

Cortes long expected his two ships that he wanted:[1] but they not comming he hoised saile & entred into the gulfe now called Mar de Cortes, Mar Vermejo (or the Gulfe of California),[2] (and shot himselfe)[3] 50 leagues within it [under the tropick of Cancer]: where he espied a ship at anker, & sailing towards her [he ran his ship ashore] he had beene [well nigh] lost [and deprived of everything], if that ship had not succored him. But hauing graued his ship, he departed with both the ships from thence. Hee bought victuals (at a deere rate)[3] at Saint Michael (of Culhuacan);[4] and from thence he went to the hauen of Santa Cruz, where hee heard that Don Antonio de Mendoça was come [to Mexico] out of Spaine to be viceroy. He therefore left to be captaine of his men one Francis de Vlloa [and went himselfe to Tagante for the purpose of sending thence,] (to send him certaine)[5] ships to discouer that coast. While he was at Acapulco messengers came vnto him

Mar Vermejo or the Gulfe of California.

Gomara, in the Conquest of Mexico, fol. 290, 291, 292.

Cruz & outro a Gayal, outro encalhou junto de Xalisco, os delle se tornarã por terra a Mexico.

Fernam Cortez esperou pellos nauios, & vendo que nam apareciam, mandou dar á vella, & entrou o estreyto que se agora chama de Cortez, & mar vermelho, cinquenta legoas por elle dẽtro, até o Tropico de Cancro, vio hũa nao surta, arribou a ella, foy dar em seco, esteue quasi perdido, & fora de todo se lhe a Nao nam socorrera, & pos a sua em terra, & corregela. Ambos se tornaram a comprar em sam Miguel mãtimento, & dahi ao porto de sancta Cruz, onde deixara a gente, aq' lhe disseram como dom Antonio de mendoça era chegado a Mexico, o gouernador da noua España, deixou aq' por capitã da gente Francisco dilhoa, foyse a Tagante p'a de lá mandar nauios em q' fosse descobrir a costa. Chegado a Capulco, lhe veo mesageiro do viso rey dõ Antonio, em q' lhe

[1] Waited for the ships.
[2] Not in Portuguese.
[3] Dele.
[4] Not in Portuguese.
[5] Dele.

from Don Antonio de Mendoça the viceroy to certifie him of his arriuall: and also he sent him the coppie of a letter, wherein Francis Pisarro wrote that Mango Ynga was risen against him, and was come to the citie of Cusco with an hundred thousand fighting men, and that they had killed his brother, John Pisarro, and aboue 400 Spaniards (and 200 horses),[1] and he himselfe was in danger,[2] so that he demanded succour and aide. Cortes being informed of the state of Pisarro, and of the arriuall of Don Antonio de Mendoça [in order that he might not rob him of the blessing or glory] (because he would not as yet be at obediẽce; first he)[3] determined [to be the first] to sende to Maluco to discouer that way a long vnder the equinoctial line, because the Islands of Cloues stand vnder that paralele: and for that purpose he prepared 2 ships with prouision, victual[4] & men, besides all other things necessarie. He gaue the charge of one of these ships to Ferdinando de Grijalua, and of the other vnto one Aluarado, a gentleman. They went first[5] to Saint Michael de Tangarara in Peru to succour Francis Pisarro, and from thence to Maluco all along neere the line as they were com-

daua cõta de como era naq'la terra: & tãbẽ lhe derã hũ trelado dũa carta q' Francisco piçarro dezia como selhe leuantara Mãgro ingou, & viera sobre a cidade de Cusco cõ cẽ mil homẽs de peleja, & lhe matara seu irmã Joã piçarro, & mais de 400 soldados & o tinha ẽ grãde ap'to, pelo q' pedia a todos socorro. Vendo Cortez isto, & a chegada de dõ Antonio de mẽdoça, por lhe nã furtar a bẽçam determinou primeiro mãdar a Maluco descobrir aq'le caminho ao lõgo da linha, por estarẽ as ylhas do crauo naq'le paralelo, & p'a isso mãdou aparelhar dous nauios de mãtimẽtos, armas, gẽtes, & todo necessario, deu a capitania dũa nao a Fernã de grijaluerez, & a outra a hũ Aluarado homẽ fidalgo. Forã direitos a S. Miguel de Tangaraga pera fauorecerẽ Fracisco picarro, & dahia Maluco ao lõgo da linha como lhe era mandado, & deziam q' andariã mais de mil legoas sẽ verẽ terra dhũa parte & outra da linha

[1] Not in Portuguese. [2] And kept him on the alert ?
[3] Dele. [4] Arms. [5] Direct.

manded. And it is declared that they sailed aboue a thousand leagues without sight of land, on the one side nor yet on the other of the equinoctiall. And in two degrees toward the north they discouered one island named Asea, which seemeth to be[1] one of the Islands of Cloues: 500 leagues little more or lesse [to the west] as they sailed, they came to the sight of another, which they named Isla de los Pescadores. Going still in this course they sawe another Island called Hayme towards the south, and another named Apia: and then they came to the sight of Seri: turning towards the north one degree, they came to anchor at another Island named Coroa, and from thence they came to another vnder the line named Meousum, and from thence vnto Bufu standing in the same course.[2]

Asea Island.
Isla de los Pescadores.
Hayme Island.
Apia Island.
Seri.
Coroa.
Meosum.
Bufu.

The people of all these islands are blacke, and have their haire frisled, whom the people of Maluco do call Papuas. The most of them eate man's flesh, and are witches, so giuen to diuilishnes, that the diuels walk among them as cõpanions. If these wicked spirits do finde one alone, they kill him with cruell blowes or smother him. Therefore they vse not to goe, but when two or three may be in a com-

Ospapuas.

& en dous graos do norte, descobrirã hũa ylha q' se chama o Acea, q' parece estar das ilhas do crauo quinhentas legoas pouco mais ou menos a loeste: pera onde hiã ouuerã vista doutra q' poserã nome dos pescadores. Indo assi nesta derrota virã hũa ylha q' se chama Haime, da parte do sul, outra q' se diz Apia, foy logo ver Seri: tornados ao norte ẽ hũ grao, surgirã ẽ outra q' se chama Coroa. Daqui forã ter a outra debaxo da linha q'se diz Meõsũ, & day a de Bufu no mesmo paralelo.

Todas estas ylhas sam de gẽtes pretas, cabelo reuolto, a q' os de Maluco chamã Papuas, os mais comẽ carne humana, grãdes feiticeiros, tã dados aos diabos q' andã antrelles como cõpanheiros, se achã hũ só matãno as pancadas, ou o afogam, por onde nã sam ousados de andarẽ sena o dous ou tres jũtos. Ha aq' hũa aue do

[1] Five hundred leagues more or less from the islands of Cloves, to the west.

[2] Parallel.

These seeme to be like ostriches.

panie. There is heere a bird as bigge as a crane: he flieth not, nor hath any wings wherewith to flee, he runneth on the ground like a deere: of their small feathers they do make haire for their idols. There is also an herbe, which being washed in warme water, if the leafe thereof be laide on any member and licked with the toong, it will draw out all the blood of a mans body: and with this leafe they vse to let themselues blood.

Guelles Islands.

Ternate.

From these islands they came vnto others named the Guelles, standing one degree towards the north, east, and west[1] from the Isle Terenate, wherein the Portugals haue a fortresse: these men are haired[2] like the people of the Malucoes. These islands stande 124 [or 125] leagues from the Island named Moro; and from Terenate betweene 40 and 50. From whence they went to the Isle of Moro, and the Islands of Cloues, going from the one vnto the other. But the people of the countrey would not suffer them to come on lande, saying vnto them: Go vnto the fortresse where the captain Antonio Galuano is, and we[3] will receiue you with a good will: for they would not suffer them to

Moro.

Molucco.

Antonio Galuano the author of this booke.

tamanho dhũ grou, nã voa nẽ tẽ penas p'a isso, corre a pè como hũ veado, das penas delles fazẽ cabellos p'a seus ydolos, & assi ha hũa erua q' lauando cõ agoa quẽte qualq'r mẽbro do corpo, ẽ põdoa encima lãbẽdo cõ alĩgoa, tirarã o sangue todo dũa pessoa, & cõ elle se sangrã. Destas ylhas foram a outras q' se chamã os Gueles, está ẽ hũ grao da parte do norte leste oeste cõ a ylha de Ternate em q' está a fortaleza portugueza. Estes homẽs sam bassos de cabelo corredio como os Maluq'ses, estam estas ilhetas 124 ou 125 legoas da ylha de Moro, & esta de Ternate 40 ate 50 donde foram ter ao Moro & ylhas do Crauo, & andaram hũas & outras, sem os da terra lhe deixarem tomar porto, dizendo q' se fossem aa fortaleza q' achariam o capitã Antonio galuão q' o receberia com boa vontade, q' eles o nam fariam sem sua licença, por ser pay da patria, que assi lhe chamauã: cousa digna de notar,

[1] In the same parallel. [2] Have lank hair. [3] Who.

come on land without his licence: for he was factor[1] of the countrey, as they named him. A thing woorthie to be noted, that those of the countrey were so affectioned to the Portugals, that they would venture for them their liues, wiues, children and goods. The case is now much altered.

In the yeere 1537 the licenciate John de Vadillo, gouernour of Cartagena, went out with a good armie from a[2] porte of Vraba called Saint Sebastian de buena Vista (being in the gulfe of Vraba),[3] and from thence to Rio verde, & from thence by land without knowing any way (nor yet hauing any carriages),[4] they went to the end of the countrey of Peru, and to the towne of La plata, by the space of 1200 leagues [from that river]: a thing woorthie of memorie. For from this riuer to the mountaines of Abibe the countrey is full of hils,[5] thicke forests of trees [valleys of jungle], and many riuers [which descended from the mountain over which they travelled], (and)[6] for lacke of a beaten way [and sure guides?] (they had pierced sides).[7] The mountaines of Abibe as it is recorded haue 20 leagues in bredth. They Pedro de de Cieça, parte primera de la Chronica del Peru, cap. 9, & 107. La Plata. The mountaines of Abibe.

porq' os daq'lla terra sam afeiçoados a castelhanos[8] q' põe por elles vidas, molheres, filhos, & fazendas.

No anno de 1537 gouernando a prouincia de Cartagena o Licẽceado João de vadilho sahio della com boa armada, & foram ao porto d'Uraba, & à cidade de Sam Sebastiam de boa vista, & dahi ao Rio verde: & por terra caminharam sem caminho nem carreira, ate fim da prouincia do Peru & villa da prata, mil & dozẽtas legoas desta ribeira. Feito digno de memoria, porq' deste Rio ate as montanhas de Abibi auerá quinhentas legoas de terra chãa, & campina, bosques, valles espessos, muitos aruoredos, rios q' descendẽ da serra por onde hiã, por falta d'estrada & carreira, pera q' hã mister guias certas.

[1] Father. [2] And went to the. [3] Not in Portuguese. [4] Dele.
[5] There were five hundred leagues of burning land, flat open country.
[6] Dele. [7] Dele. [8] Portuguese ?

must be passed ouer in Januarie, Februarie, March and Aprill. And from that time forward it raineth much, and the riuers will be so greatly encreased, that you cannot passe for them. There are in those mountaines many (heards of swine, many dantes),[1] lyons, tygers, beares, ounses, and great cats (and monkeis, and mightie)[2] snakes and other such vermine.[3] Also there be in these mountaines abundance of [swine, deer of two kinds, hares, rabbits, and other game], partridges, quailes, turtle doues, pigeons, and other birds and foules of sundrie sorts. Likewise in the riuers is such plentie of fish, that they did kill of them with their staues: and carrying canes and nets they affirme that a great army might be sustained [pleasantly] (that way without being distressed for want of victuals).[4] Moreouer they declared the diuersities of the people, toongs, and apparell that they obserued in the countries, kingdomes, and prouinces which they went through, and the great trauels[5] and dangers that they were in till they came to the towne called Villa de la Plata, and vnto the sea [on the other side] (thereunto adioyning).[6] This was the greatest discouerie that

Villa de la Plata.

Estas montanhas Dabibi, diz q' teram vinte legoas de largo, ham se de atrauessar no mes de Janeiro, Feuereiro, Março, Abril, porq' dahi por diante choue tanto que vã as ribeiras crecidas, & nam se pode caminhar por ellas. Ha tambem muitos leões, tygres, hussos, onças: & grandes gatos, cobras, & outras feras diuersas. Nestas montanhas assi hà tantos porcos, veados, corços, Guazelas, lebres, coelhos: & outras muitas caças, perdizes, codirnizes, pombos, rolas: & outras aues de diuersas castas. E nos Rios tãtos pescados, q' com os paos os matauan, & leuando cães, redes, diz q' poderam manter hũ exercito com desenfadamento. Assi contauam das muitas prouincias, regnos, senhorios q' atrauessaram, & diuersas gentes, linguages, & trajos q' viram, muitos trabalhos & perigos q' passarão, ate chegarem á villa da prata, & mar da outra

[1] Dele. [2] Dele. [3] Wild beasts.
[4] Dele. [5] Troubles. [6] Dele.

hath beene heard of by land, and in so short a time. And if it had not beene done in our daies, the credite thereof would haue beene doubtfull.

In the yeere 1538 there went out of Mexico certaine friers of the order of Saint Francis towards the north to preach to the Indians the catholicke faith. He that went farthest was one frier Marke de Nizza, who passed through Culuacan, and came to the prouince of Sibola, where he found seuen cities [of which he related marvels]: and the farther he went, the richer he found the countrie of gold, siluer, previous stones, and sheepe bearing very fine wool. Vpon the fame of this welth the viceroy don Antonio de Mendoça, and Cortes, determined to send a power thither. But when they could not agree[1] thereupon Cortes went ouer into Spaine in the yeere 1540, where afterward he died.

Ramusius, 3 vol., fol. 356.

Frier Marke de Nizza. Sibola.

In this yeere 1538 began the ciuil warre betweene Pisarro and Almagro, wherein (at the last)[2] Almagro was [overcome] taken and beheaded.

---

banda: & foy o mõr descubrimento q' se ainda vio por terra: em tam breue tempo, que se não fora no nosso tiuera duuidoso credito.

No anno de 1538 sahiram da cidade de Mexico frades Franciscos contra o Norte, pregar aos Indios a nossa sancta fee catholica, & o q' mais se meteo pella terra, foy fre Marcos de missa, q' passou por Culuacão, & chegou â prouincia de Sibola: & dezia auer nela sete cidades de q' coutauam marauilhas: & quanto mais hiã adiante, tanto mais achauam a terra rica d'ouro, prata, pedraria, & gados de lãa muy fina. Era tãta a fama desta terra, & riqueza, q' se desauierão o Viso rey dom Antonio de mendoça, & Fernã Cortez sobre mandar a ella, pello q' se passou Cortez a Castella no ãno de 1540 & acabou l' sua vida. E nesta de 1538 foy começada

---

[1] So rich was this country considered, that the viceroy and Cortez disagreed about sending thither.

[2] Dele.

Gomara, hist. gen., lib. 5, cap. 34.

Antonie Galuano, chiefe captaine of Maluco, author of this worke.

In the same yeere 1538, Antonie Galuano being chiefe captaine in the isles of Maluco, sent a ship towards the north, whereof one Francis de Castro was captaine, hauing commandement to conuert as many as he could to the faith. [having been asked to do so by many of those parts.] He himselfe christened many, (as the lords)[1] of the Celebes, Macasares, Amboynos, Moros, Moratax, and diuers other places. When Francis de Castro arriued at the Island of Mindanao [and other islands near them], sixe kings receiued the water of baptisme, with their wiues, children and subiects: and the most of them Antonie Galuano gaue commandement to be called by the name of John, in remembrance that king John the third raigned then in Portugall [so much had he that name in his memory].

The Portugals and Spaniards which haue beene in these islands affirme, that there be certaine hogs in them, which besides the teeth which they haue in their mouthes, haue other two growing out of their snouts, and as many behinde their eares, of a large span and an halfe in length. Like-

---

a guerra ciuil antre Piçarro & Almagro, por onde elle foy desbaratado, & preso, & degolado.

No mesmo anno de 1538 mandou Antonio galuano, q' estaua por capitã em Maluco, cõtra o norte hu nauio, & capitã dele Fracisco de castro, cõ regimẽto q' fizesse quantos christãos podesse, por ser dalgũs daq'las partes req'rido p'a isso, & o mesmo Antonio galuão ter muitos feitos [fieis] dos celebres[2] Mocasares, Amboynos, Moros, Maratax, & outras diuersas partes. Chegado Francisco de Castro á ylha de Midanao, & outras q' descobrio acima dellas, tomarã seis Reys agoa de baptismo cõ molheres, filhos, vassalos, & aos mais deles mandou Antonio galuã por nome Joannes, em memoria do terceiro q' em Portugal reynaua, tanto trazia na sua.

Os Portugueses & Castelhanos q' por estas ylhas andaram, contauam q' auia nellas porcos, q' alẽ dos dẽtes q' tinha na boca, lhe suyã outros dous pelos focinhos, & outros tãtos por detrás das orelhas, & tinhã de cõprido palmo & meo. E auia hũa aruore q' o

[1] Dele.

[2] Celebes ?

wise they say there is a tree, the one halfe whereof, which standeth towards the east, is a good medicine against all poyson, and the other side of the tree, which standeth toward the west, is very poison; and the fruite on that side is like a bigge pease; and there is made of it the strongest poyson that is in all the world. Also they report that there is there another tree, the fruite whereof whosoeuer doth eate, shall be twelue houres besides himselfe [and shall act without judgment], and when he commeth againe vnto himselfe he shall not remember what he did in the time of his madnes. Moreouer there are certaine crabs of the land, whereof whosoeuer doth eate shall be a certaine space out of his wits. Likewise the countrey people declare that there is a stone in these islands whereon whosoeuer sitteth shall be broken in his bodie.[1] It is further to be noted, that the people of these islands do gild their teeth [and fix across their privy parts a bar of gold or silver, and rivet the points in the form of a rose, which causes a woman to bleed].

In the yeere 1539 Cortes sent three ships with Francis Vlloa to discouer the coast of Culuacan northward. They

Gomar., hist. gen., lib. 2, cap. 74, & Ramusius, 3 vol., fol. 329.

meio dela q' estaua cõtra o oriẽte, era muy medicinal, & cõtra toda peçonha, o outro meio da aruore q' estaua cõtra o ponẽte he muy peçonhẽto, & o fruito daq'la bãda he todo como tramasso, & se faz delle a mais forte peçonha q' ha na redõdeza, & assi se dizia q' auia outra aruore q' quẽ comia seu fruto estaua doze oras fora de si, & fazia cousas de homem sem siso, quando tornaua nam daua nenhum acordo disso, & auia hũs cangrejos da terra que quẽ os comia, tambẽ estaua certas oras da mesma maneira. Assi diziam os da terra que auia ahi hũa pedra q' quẽ se assentaua nela criaua potra, os homẽs destas ylhas douram os dentes, & atrauessam sua natura cõ hũa barra douro ou prata, & nas pontas rebatem hũas rosas, com que ensanguentam hũa molher toda.

No anno de 1539 mãdou Fernã cortez tres nauios a Frãcisco guil-

[1] Ruptured.

went from Acapulco, and touched at S. Jago de buena sperança, and entred into the gulfe that Cortes had discouered, and sailed till they came in 32 degrees, which is almost the farthest end of that gulfe, which place they named Ancon de Sant Andrew, because they came thither on that saints daie. Then they came out a long the coast on the other side, and doubled the point of California and entred in betweene certaine islands and the point,[1] and so sailed along by it, till they came to 32 degrees, from whence they returned (to newe Spaine),[2] enforced thereunto by contrarie windes (and want of victuals);[2] hauing beene out about a yeere. Cortes, according to his account, spent 200,000 ducates[3] in these discoueries.

The bottome of the gulfe of California discouered.

California doubled.

From Cabo del Enganno to another cape called Cabo de Liampo in China there are 1000 or 1,200 leagues sayling, [of which] Cortes and his captaines discouered [and conquered] (new Spaine),[2] from 12 degrees to 32 from south to the north, being 700 leagues [of coast from east to west], finding it more warm then cold, although snow do lie vpon certaine moun-

Cabo del Enganno. The distance betweene America and China in 32 degrees is 1000 leagues. Gomara, hist. gen., lib. 6, cap. 17.

---

hoa p'a descobrir a costa de Culuacam p'a cima. Partiram de Capuleo tocaram Santiago de boa esperança, entrarã no estreito q' Cortez descobrira: chegaram por ele acima até trinta & dous graos daltura, que he o fim dagoa, poseram lhe nome Ancon de sancto Andre por ser em seu dia. Tornaram p'a fora ao longo da costa da outra banda, dobrarã a põta de California, & meterã se por antre as ylhas & a terra: foraõ ao longo della ate se poerẽ em 32 graos, donde arribaram por vento contrario auendo hũ anno q' la andauam, dizem q' gastou Fernã cortez nestas armadas & descobrimẽtos dozentos mil cruzados, & q' desta ponta do engano auera à outra de Liampo da China mil ou mil & dozentas legoas de rota abatida, & q' o q' descobrio & conquistoro Fernão Cortez & seus capitães he de doze graos ate trinta & dous de Leste oeste, em q' auera setecentas legoas pella terra dentro, que he mais quente que

[1] Main. [2] Not in Portuguese. [3] Crusadoes.

taines most part of the yeere. In new Spaine there be many trees, flowers and fruits of diuers sorts and profitable for many things. The principall tree is named Metl [or the honey tree]. Metl an excellent tree. It groweth not very high nor thicke. They plant and dresse it as we do our vines. They say it hath fortie kinde of leaues like wouen clothes, which serue for many vses.[1] When they be tender they make conserues of them, paper, and a thing like vnto flaxe: they make of it mantles, shooes, mats, girdles, and cordage. These trees haue certaine prickles so strong and sharpe, that they sewe with them [as with an awl]. The roots[2] make fire and ashes, which ashes make excellent good lie. They open the earth from the roote and scrape it, and the iuice which commeth out is like a sirrupe. If you do seeth it, it will become honie; if you purifie it it will be sugar. Also you may make wine and vinegar thereof.[3] (It beareth the coco).[4] The rinde (rosted and)[5] crushed [and squeezed] vpon sores and hurts healeth and cureth.[6] The iuice of the tops[7] and roots mingled with [the

---

fria, ainda que ha serras que dura a neue & geada quasi todo o anno.

Hà na noua Espanha muito aruoredo de flores & fructos, diuersos & proueitosos pera muitas cousas, & a mais principal della se chama aruore metel, ou do mel, não he muy grande nem grossa: prantã na, podã na, concertã na como vinha: diz q' tem quarenta folhas de feiçam de telhas & seruem disso & quando sam tenras fazem conseruas dellas, papel, fiãmes como linho, fazem dellas mãtas, alpargates, esteiras, cintas, xaquemas: tem estas aruores hũas espinhas tã duras & agudas q' cozem cõ ellas como com souellas, & o tronco dá bõ lume & cinza pera de coada, escauam na ao pee, & agoa q' estila he como arrobe se a cozem fica mel, se a purificã, açuquere, se lhe deitam patalim, vinho, se a destemperam, vinagre, as pencas assadas & exprimidas sobre chagas ou

---

[1] Like tiles, and are used as such. [2] Stem.

[3] If —— be thrown into it, wine, if diluted, vinegar.

[4] Not in Portuguese. [5] Dele. [6] Forms a crust. [7] Ears.

juice of] incense are[1] good against poyson, and the biting of a viper. (For these manifold benefits)[2] [Thus] it is the most profitable tree knowne (to growe in those parts).[2]

Also there be there certaine small birds named Vicmalim. Their bill is small[3] and long. They liue of the dewe [honey] and the iuice of flowers and roses. Their feathers be verie small and of diuers colours. They be greatly esteemed to worke golde with. They die or sleepe euerie yeere in the moneth of October: sitting[4] vpon a little bough in a warme and close place,[5] they reuiue or wake againe in the moneth of Aprill after that the flowers be sprung, and therefore they call them the reuiued birds.

The reuiued birds.

Likewise there be snakes in these parts, which sound as though they had bels when they creepe. There be other which engender at the mouth, euen as they report of the viper. There be hogges which haue a nauell on the ridge of their backs, which assoone as they be killed and[6] cut, will by and by corrupt and stinke.

---

ferida, sara & encoura, o sumo das espigas & rayzes emburilhadas com sumo de encenso, he bõ contra a peçonha & mordedura de bibora, assi que he mais proueitosa aruore que se la sabe.

Há la hũs passarinhos q' se chamã Vicincilim sam pequenos, o bico delgado & comprido, mãtem se do rocio, mel, licor de flores, & rosa, tem as penas meudas & de diuersus cores, prezã nas muito pera laurar ouro, morre ou adormece cada ãno: no mes Doutubro posto em hum raminho em lugar abrigado resuscita, ou acorda no mes Dabril depois & que ha flores, pello q' lhe chamam o resuscitado. Ha cobras q' sam como cascaneis quando andã: ha outras q' emprenhã pella boca, como dizẽ da bibora: ha porcos cõ embigos no espinhaço, que matandoos se lho nam cortam fede logo: ha pexes que guincham como porcos & roncam, per onde lhe chamam roncadores.

---

[1] Is.
[2] Not in Portuguese.
[3] Slender.
[4] Placed.
[5] Sheltered place.
[6] If it be not.

Besides these there be certaine fishes which make a noyse like vnto hogs, and will snort, for which cause they be named snorters. Snorting fishes.

In the yeere 1538 and 1539, after that Diego de Almagro was beheaded, the Marquis Francis Pisarro was not idle. For he sent straight one Peter de Baldiuia with a good companie of men to discouer and conquere the countrey of Chili. He was wel receiued of those of the countrey, but afterwards they rose against him and would haue killed him by treason. Yet for all the warre that he had with them, he discouered much land, and the coast of the sea toward the southeast,[1] till he came into 40 degrees and more in latitude. While he was in these discoueries he heard newes of a king called Leucengolma, which commonly brought to the field two hundred thousand fighting men[2] against another king his neighbour [who brought as many], and that this Leucengolma had an island, and a temple therein with two thousand priestes: and that beyond them were the Amazones, whose queene was called Guanomilla, that is to say, the golden heauen [whence the Spaniards concluded that there

Gomara, hist. gen., lib. 5, cap. 15.

Chili.

This might be the temple in the lake of Titicaca. Cieça, cap. 103.

No anno de 1538 & 1539, depoys de Diogo Dalmagro degolado, ho marquez Fernam Piçarro nam esteue ocioso, mandou logo Pero de baldiua com muita gente ao descobrimento & conquista de Chily, foy bem recebido dos da terra, & depois o quiseram matar por enganos, & com toda a guerra que teue descobrio muita terra & costa, do mar da banda de Leste ate quarenta & tantos graos daltura: & ouuiram dizer dos naturaes de Hulcham, que juntaua dous mil homēs de peleja, contra outro rey seu vezinho, q' traria o mesmo: & Hulcham colma tinha hūa ylha & templo cō dous mil sacerdotes. Dētro & mais adiante auia amazonas, & a raynha dellas se chamana Ganomilha, q' quer dizer ceo douro, donde os Castelhanos tomaram auer ali muita riqueza, & assi de hūa ylha

[1] The coast runs nearly north and south.

[2] They heard tell by the natives of Hulcham, who collected two thousand fighting men, etc.

were great riches to be found there, and also at an Island called Solomon]. But as yet there are none of these things discouered. About this time Gomez de Aluarado went to conquer the prouince of Guanuco: and Francis de Chauez went to subdue the Conchincos, which troubled the towne of Truxillo, and the countreyes adioyning. Peter de Vergara went to the Bracamores, a people dwelling toward the north from Quito. John Perez de Vagara went against the Ciaciapoians: Alfonsus de Mercadiglio went vnto Mulubamba. Ferdinando and Gonzaluo Pisarros went to subdue Collao, a [healthy] countrey very rich in gold [and silver]. Peter de Candia went [above] (to the lower part of)[1] Collao [a barren country with a warlike population]. Peranzures also went to conquer the said countrey. And thus the Spanyards dispersed themselues, and conquered aboue seuen hundred leagues of countrey in a very short space, though not without great trauailes and losse of men.[2] [In the year 1540 Captain Fernando Alcarano went, by command of the Viceroy Don Antonio de Mendoza, with two ships to discover the coast.]

---

que se chama de Salamam, tambem dizem ser muy rica, mas nada disto se vio ategora. Gomez Daluarado foy á prouincia de Ganuco, Francisco de Chaues aos Conchucos q' corriam a Trozilho, por serem vezinhos, Pero de Vergara ao Bracamoros que estam ao norte de Quito, Joam perez de veragar contra os Chachapoyos, Alonso de mercadilho a Malubumbo, Fernando & Gonçalo piçarro, ao Colao terra sadia & rica douro & prata, Pero de Candia acima de Colao, terra aspera de gente belicosa. Perancuris tambem foy descobrir, cõquistar, & pouoar terra, & outros per outra banda se estenderam mays de setesentas legoas com gram presteza.

No anno de 1540 foy o capitã fernã alcarão por mãdado do viso rey dõ Antonio de mẽdoça com dous nauios descobrir a costa.

---

[1] Dele.

[2] Perancuris also went to discover, conquer, and people fresh country; and others on the other side extended themselves more than seventy leagues very rapidly.

The countreyes of Brasill and Peru stand east and west almost 800 leagues (distant).[1] The neerest[2] is from the Cape of Saint Augustine vnto the hauen of Truxillo: for they stand both almost in one parallele and latitude [of six degrees]. And the farthest is[3] [more than] 950 leagues, reckoning from the riuer of Peru to the streits of Magellan, which places lie directly north and south, through which countrey passe certaine mountaines named the Andes, which diuide Brasill from the empire of the Ingas. After this maner the mountaines of Taurus and Imaus diuide Asia into two parts: which mountaines begin in 36 and 37 degrees of northerly latitude at the end of the Mediterran sea ouer against the Isles of Rhodes and Cyprus, running still towards the east vnto the sea of China. And so likewise the mountaines of Atlas in Africa diuide the tawnie Moores from the blacke Moores which haue frisled haire, beginning [at the Red Sea] (at mount Meies about the desert of Barea),[4] and running along vnder the Tropicke of Cancer vnto the Atlanticke Ocean.

The mountaines of Andes.

Estas terras do Brasil & Peru teram de Leste oeste perto de oitocentas legoas pello mais largo, q' he do cabo de Sancto Agustinho ao porto de Trozilho: porque estam ambos em hum paralelo em seis graos daltura, & de comprido mais de nouecentas & cinquenta, q' se contem do Rio Peru ao estreito q' ho Magalhães descobrio norte sul dereitas, em que ha hũas serras a que chamam os Andes, que apartam o Brasil do imperio dos Inguas, assi & da maneira que os mõtes Taurus & Imãos, o fazem em Asia os Indidios dos Sytas, os quaes montes começam em trinta & seis ou trinta & sete graos daltura, na fim do mar Mediterraneo, defronte das ylhas de Rodes & Chipre, & vam sempre a leste ate o mar da China, como os montes Atalantes: diuidem em Affrica os mouros brancos dos negros de cabello reuolto, começando no mar roxo, vam ao longo de Tropico de Cancro, ate o mar chamado Atalantico.

---

[1] Dele. [2] Widest part. [3] Of length.
[4] Not inPortuguese.

The mountains of the Andes be high, ragged [craggy], and in some places barren without trees or grasse, whereon it raineth and snoweth most commonly. Vpon them are windes and sudden blastes; there is likewise such scarcitie of wood, that they make fire of turffes, as they do in Flanders. In some places of these mountaines and countries the earth is of diuers colours, as blacke, white, red, greene, blew, yellow, and violet, wherewith they die colours without any other mixture. From the bottomes of these mountaines spring[1] many small and great riuers, principally from the east side, as appeereth by the riuers of the Amazones, [and Maranhan], of S. Francis, of Plata, [of St. John], and many others which runne through the countrey of Brasil, being larger then those of Peru, or those of Castilia del oro. There grow on these mountaines many turneps, rapes,[2] and other such like rootes and herbes. One there is like vnto Aipo or rue[3] which beareth a yellow flower, and healeth all kinde of rotten sores, and if you apply it vnto whole and cleane flesh it will eate it vnto the bone: for that it is good for the vnsound and naught for the whole.

Earth of diuers colours good to dy withall.

As montanhas dos Andes, sam altas, asperas, fragosas, & ha lugares escaluados, sem aruores, nẽ heruas, chouendo & neuando de contino nellas, cõ vẽtos & trouoadas, carecẽ tãto de lenha, q' fazẽ fogo de terra como em Frandes. Ha partes nestas serras, & terras de cores diuersas, hũa preta, outra branca, vermelha, verde, azul, amarella, & mirada, de que fazem tintas sem mais mesturas. Saem das rayzes destas montanhas muitas ribeiras pequenas & grandes, principalmente da parte de Leste, como se parece no rio das Amazonas & Maranho de sam Francisco, da prata, sam Ioam, & outros muitos q' ha na terra do Brasil, por ser mais largo q' o do Peru & noua Castela. Criam se nesta serra muitos nabos, tramossos, & outras: ha hũa como aypo, dá flor amarela, q' sara toda chaga podrida, & se a põe em carne saá & limpa come até o osso, assi q' he boa pera o mao & mà pera o bõ.

[1] Run. [2] Beans. [3] ?

They say there be in these mountains tigers, lions, beares, woolues, wilde cats, foxes, [antas],[1] (dantes, dunces),[2] hogs, [goats], and deere: birdes as well rauenous as others, and the most part of them are blacke, as vnder the north both[3] beasts and birdes be white. Also there be great & terrible snakes which destroied a whole armie of the Ingas passing that way, yet they say that an olde woman did inchant them in such sort that they became so gentle, that a man might sit vpon one of them.[4] The countrey of Peru adioining vnto the mountaines of Andes westward toward the sea, [is diuided into three parts, the Andes, which are very high, some mountains which skirt them, and in the flat valleys which are along the coast, running inland from 15 to 20 leagues], (and containing 15 or 20 leagues in bredth, is)[5] all of very hot sand, yet fresh, bringing foorth many good trees and fruites because it is well watered: where there growe abundance of[6] [reeds] flags, rushes, herbes, and trees (so slender and loose),[7] that laying your hands vpon them the leaues

---

Dizem q' ha nestas montanhas, tigres, liões, hussos, lobos, gatos, raposos, antas, porcos, veados, guazelas, aues, assi de rapina como destroutras, & as mais sam pretas como debaxo do norte: as mesmas alimarias & aues sam brancas. Ha tambē grandes cobras & tam feras, q' passando hum exercito dos Inguas o destruyram, mas dizem q' hūa velha as encantou de maneira, q' ficaram tam mansas q' andão homēs caualgados sobre ellas. As terras do Perū q' jazē das serras dos Andes, a loeste cōtra a marinha, he em tres partes diuidida, os Andes q' sam muy grādes, & algūs montes q' jazem na fralda delles, & ē campos, valles, q' vam ao longo da costa, & alargamse pella terra dentro quinze ou vinte legoas, todas d'areaes muy quentes, frescos de diuersos aruoredos & fruitos, per serem regados: & por debaxo canas, espadanas, juncos, heruas, & aruores, q' pondo a mão nellas, caelhe a folha: & por antre estas

---

[1] Tapir ? [2] Dele. [3] The same.
[4] That men rode astride upon them. [5] Dele.
[6] And in the low grounds. [7] Not in Portuguese.

will fall off. And among these herbes and fresh flowers the men and women liue and abide without any houses or bedding, euen as the cattell doe in the fields; and some of them haue tailes. They be grosse, and weare long haire. They haue no beards, yet haue they diuers languages.

Those which line on the tops[1] of these mountains of Andes betweene the cold and the heate for the most part be blinde of one eie, and some altogether blinde, and scarce you shall finde two men of them together, but one of them is halfe blinde. Also there groweth in these fields, notwithstanding the great heate of the sand, good maiz, and potatos, and an herbe which they name coca, which they carrie continually in their mouthes, as in the East India they vse another herbe named betele, which also they say satisfieth both hunger and thirst. Also there are other kindes of graines and rootes whereon they feede. Moreouer there is plentie of wheate, barly, millet, vines, and fruitful trees, (which are brought out)[2] of Spaine and planted there. For all these things prooue well in this countrey, because it is so commodiously watered.

An herbe named coca which satisfieth hunger and thirst.

---

verduras, flores, & frescuras, se crião os homẽs & molheres sẽm casas, & camas, como os gados nos campos: & algũs tem rabos, sam grosseiros, cabellos, compridos, nam tem barbas, mas diuersas lingoas.

Os q' viuem nas fraldas destas mõtanhas dos Andes, antre a frialdade & quentura, sam pela mayor parte tortos, & algũs cegos: de marauilha se acham dous homẽs juntos, q' hum delles nam seja torto. Tambẽ se dá por estes campos, ainda q' d'area calidissimos, muito bõ maiz & batatas, & hũas heruas a q' chamam coca, q' trazẽ sempre na boca, como na India o betele, q' dizẽ q' mata a sede & fome. E assi ha outros grãos & rayzes q' la comem, muito trigo, ceuada, milho, vinhos, & outras aruores Despanha q' la prantaram, porq' tudo se dá bem naquella terra, por ser regada. Tambem se semea muito algodam, q' de seu natural he branco,

---

[1] Skirts. [2] ?

Also they sow much cotton wooll, which of nature is white, red, blacke, [blue], greene, yellow, orange, tawnie, and of diuers other colours.

Likewise they affirme, that from Tumbez southward it doth neither raine, thunder, nor lighten, for the space of fiue hundred leagues of land : but at some times there falleth some little shower [or dew]. Also it is reported, that from Tumbez to Chili there breede no peacocks, hennes, cocks, nor eagles, falcons, haukes, kites, nor any other kinde of rauening fowles, and yet there are of them in all other regions and countreies : but there are many duckes, geese, herons, pigeons, partriges, quailes, [owls, nightingales], and many other kindes of birdes. There are also a certaine kinde of fowle like vnto a ducke, which hath no wings to flie withall, but it hath fine thinne feathers [or veil] which couer all the body. Likewise there are bitters[1] that make war with the seale or sea wolfe : for finding them out of the water they will labour to picke out their eies, that they may not see to get to the water againe, and then they doe kill them. They say it is a pleasant sight to behold [this sport] (the fight betweene the said bitters and seales).[2] With the

---

vermelho, preto, azul, verde, amarelo, aleonado, & doutras diuersas cores.

Assi dizem q' de Tumbez por diante, não choue, nem trouoeja, ne relampaguea, mais de quinhentas legoas, ás vezes cae algũ orualho, & tãbem querẽ dizer q' de Tumbez a Chili, nam se criem pauas, galinhas, nem galos, nem aguias, falcões, açores, gauiães, nem outras aues de rapina auendoas em toda a outra terra & comarca : mas ha muitos patos, adẽs, garças, rolas, põbos, perdizes, codornizes, mouchos, petos, roxinoes, & outras aues, hũas como patos sem penas, tem hum veo delgado q' as cobre todas : ha butres q' tem guerra com os lobos marinhos, como os acham fora dagoa quebram lhe os olhos aas picadas, por se nam acolheram a

[1] Vultures.

[2] Not in Portuguese.

beards of these seales men make cleane their teeth, because they be wholesome for the toothach. There are certaine beastes which those of the countrey call Xacos, and the Spanyards sheepe, because they beare wooll like vnto a sheepe, but are made much like vnto a deere, hauing a saddle backe like vnto a camell. They will carrie the burthen of 100 weight. The Spanyards ride vpon them, and when they be wearie they will turne their heads backward, and void out of their mouthes a woonderful stinking water.

Xacos a kinde of great sheepe that men ride vpon.

From the riuer of Plata and Lima southward[1] there breede no crocodiles nor lizards, no snakes, nor any kinde of venemous vermine,[2] but great store of good fishes breede in those riuers. On the coast of Saint Michael in the South sea there are many rocks of salt couered with egges. On the point of Saint Helena are certaine well-springs which cast foorth a liquor, that serueth in stead of pitch and tarre. They say that in Chili there is a fountaine, the water whereof will conuert wood[3] into stone [and clay into great stones]. In the hauen of Truxillo there is a lake of fresh

---

ella, assi os matam : diz q' he pera folgar de ver esta caça : cõ as barbas dos lobos alimpam os dentes, por ser bom pera a dõr delles. Ha hũas alimarias que os da terra chamã xacos, os Castelhanos ouelhas por terem lãas como elles, sam da feiçam de ceruos : tem gibas como camellos, leuam peso de quatro arrobas, os Castelhanos caualgã nellas, quando cansam volvem a cabeça, & deitão hũa agoa muy fedorenta.

Dos Rios da prata & Lima pera cima nam se criam lagartos, cobras, nem bichos peçonhẽtos por onde ha muitos & bõs pescados. Na costa de sam Miguel, no mar ha grãdes pedras de sal cubertas d'ouas. Na põta de sancta Elena ha fontes q' deitam licor q' serue de pez & alcatram. Dizem q' em Chicha ha hũa fonte q' sua agoa cõuerte a terra em pedra, & o barro penedo. No porto de Trugilho ha hũa alagoa d'agoa doce, & o fundo de bom

[1] Upwards.
[2] For which reason there be great store of good fish.
[3] Earth.

water, and the bottome thereof is of good hard salt. In the Andes beyond Xauxa there is a riuer of fresh water, in the bottome whereof there lieth white salt. Also they affirme by the report of those of the countrey, that there haue dwelt giants in Peru, of whose statures[1] they found in Porto viejo, and in the hauen of Truxillo, bones and iawes with teeth, which were three and fower fingers long. (In the yeere 1540 the captaine Ferdinando Alorchon went by the commandement of the Viceroy Don Antonio de Mendoça with two ships to discouer the bottome of the gulfe of California, and diuers other countries.)[2] Ramusius, 3 vol., fol. 363.

In this yeere 1540 Gonsaluo Pizarro went out of the citie of Quito to discouer the countrey of Canell or Cinamome, a thing of great fame in that countrey. He had with him two hundred Spanyards horsemen and footemen, and three hundred Indians to carrie burthens. He went forward til he came to Guixos, which is the farthest place gouerned by the Ingas: where there happened a great earthquake with raine and lightning, which sunke 60 houses. They passed ouer cold and snowie hils, where they found many Indians frozen to death, maruelling much of the great snowe that Gomara, hist. geu., lib. 5, cap. 36.

---

sal coalhado. E nos Andes detras de Xauxa ha hum Rio dagoa doce, & o fundo de sal branco: assi dizem os da terra que ouue gigãtes nella, cujas estatuas acharam em Porto velho, & no de Trugilho grãdes ossos & cauernas cõ dẽtes de tres ou quatro dedos em largo.

No anno de 1540 partio Gonçalo piçarro da cidade de Quito ao descobrimento da canella, cousa muito nomeada naquella terra, leuaua dozentos Espanhoes de pè & cauallo, trezentos Indios de carrega, caminhou ate Quixos que he a derradeira cousa q' os Inguas senhorearam, onde lhe tremeo a terra, & choueo, & relampagueou, tanto que se fundiram sessenta casas: passaram hũas serras muy frias & neuadas, onde lhe ficaram muitos Indios rege-

[1] Statues. [2] Not in Portuguese.

they found vnder the equinoctiall line. From hence they
Cumaco. went to a prouince called Cumaco, where they tarried two monethes because it rained continually. And beyond they
Cinamom-trees. sawe the cinamome-trees, which be very great, the leaues thereof resembling bay leaves, both leaues, branches, rootes, and all tasting of Cinamome. The rootes haue the whole taste of Cinamome. But the best are certaine knops like vnto alcornoques or acornes, which are good marchandise.[1]
Wild cinamom in the Islands of Jaua. It appeereth to be wilde cinamone, and there is much of it in the East Indies, and in the Islands of Jaoa or Jaua.

[In this year 40 Fernando Cortez returned with his wife to Castile and died of disease.] From hence they went to
Coca. the prouince and citie of Coca, where they rested fifty daies. From that place forwards they trauailed along by a riuers side being 60 leagues long, without finding of any bridge, nor yet any forde, [nor meanes] to passe ouer to the other side. They found one place of this riuer, where it had a
El pongo, a mighty fall of a riuer. fall of 200 fathomes deepe, where the water made such a noise, that it would make a man almost deafe to stand by it. And not far beneath this fall, they say they found a chanell

---

lados, & elles espantados da gram neue q' auia debaixo da linha. Daqui foram a hũa prouincia q' se chama Cumaco, onde esteuerã dous meses por lhes chouer contino: & ao diante viram as aruores de canella q' sam grandes, & as folhas como de loureiro, & ellas, & codea, & rayzes tem tudo sabor de canella, mas o melhor della he hũs capulhos como dalcornoques, de que ha gram trato: & segundo parece deue ser canella braua que ha muyta na India, & ilhas de Java. E neste anno de quarenta foy Fernam Cortez com sua molher pera Castella, & faleceo lá de doença.

Daqui foram à prouincia ou cidade de Coca, onde repousaram cinquẽta dias. Dahi por diãte caminharam ao longo de hũa ribeira muy grande sessenta legoas sem acharem ponte, vao, nem por onde passassem a outra banda, somẽte acharam o rio de dozentos

---

[1] With which there is great trade.

of stone very smooth, of two hundred[1] foote broad, and the riuer runneth by:[2] and there they made a bridge to passe ouer on the other side [it is said to be a better country]; where they went to a country called Guema, which was so poore, that they could get nothing to eate but onely fruits and herbes [some like truffles]. From that place forward they found a people of some reason, wearing certaine clothing made of cotton wooll, where they made a brigandine [payed with resin]; and there they found also certaine canoas, wherein they put their sicke men, and their treasure and best apparell, giuing the charge of them to one Francis de Orellana: and Gonsaluo Pizarro went by land with the rest of the companie along by the riuers side, and at night went into the boates, and they trauailed in this order two hundred leagues as it appeereth. When Pizarro came to the place where he thought to finde the brigandine and canoas, and could haue no sight of them nor yet heare of them, he thought himselfe out of all hope, because he was in a strange countrey without victuales, clothing, or any Guema.

---

estadios, onde a agoa fazia tam grande roydo q' parecia q' emmouq'cia a quẽ junto estaua: & nam muito abaxo diz q' acharam hum canal de pedra, talhada de vinte pès em largo, por onde todo o Rio passa, em q' fezeram ponte pera a outra banda: dizem ser melhor terra. Foram a hũa que se chama Gema, tam pobre que nam comiam se nam frutas & heruas, & hũas como tubaras da terra. Adiante acharam gente de razam, que vestiam algodam, onde fezeram hum bergantim brado com rasina, & acharam algũas canoas em q' meteram os doentes, & o melhor vestido & peças q' leuauã: & deram carrego desta armada a Frãcisco dorilhana, & Gõçalo piçarro foy por terra cõ a mais gente ao longo da ribeira, & como era noite recolhiam se aos nauios, & caminhariam assi dozentas legoas segundo lhe parecia.

Chegado Piçarro onde esperaua achar o bergantim & canoas, &

---

[1] Twenty.

[2] Through which the whole river passes.

thing else: wherefore they were faine to eate their horses, yea and dogs also, because the countrey was poore and barren, and the iourney long, to goe to Quito. Yet notwithstanding, taking a good hart to themselues, they went on forwards in their iourney, trauailing continually 18 monethes, and it is reported that they went almost five hundred leagues, wherein they did neither see sunne nor any thing else whereby they might be comforted, wherefore of two hundred men which went foorth at the first, there returned not backe past ten vnto Quito, and these so weake, ragged, and disfigured that they knew them not. Orellana went five hundred or sixe hundred leagues downe the riuer, seeing diuers countreyes and people on both sides thereof, among whom he affirmed some to be Amazones. He came into Castile, excusing himselfe, that the water and streames draue him downe perforce. This riuer is named The riuer of Orellana, and other name it the riuer of the Amazones, because there be women there which liue like vnto them.

Rio de Orellana.

In the yeere 1540 Cortes went with his wife into Spaine, where he died of a disease seuen yeeres after.[1]

---

como as nam vio nẽ nouas dellas ficou muito agastado por se ver em terra alhea, sem mantimento, vestido, nem cousa algũa q' ate os cauallos & cães comeram, & a terra pobre, fragosa, caminho comprido pera tornar á cidade de Quito, & com tudo poseram se a isso & no caminho andaram anno & meo: & diz q' andariam quatrocentas ou quinhentas legoas, onde nam acharam sol nem cousa que os podesse confortar, por onde de dozentos que eram nam tornaram a Quito dez, & estes tam fracos, rotos, & trasfigurados, que os nam conheciam. Orilhana andaria quinhentas ou seis centas legoas pello Rio abaxo, vendo diuersas terras & gentes de hũa parte & de outra, & diz q' ha Amazonas. Veyo ter a Castela desculpãdo se q' a agoa o trouxera por força: a qual se chama o rio Dorilhana, & outros das Amazonas pelas auer nesta terra, ou molheres q' viuẽ como elas.

[1] See back, page 222.

In the yeere 1541 it is recorded that Don Stephan de Gama, gouernour of India, sailed toward the streit of Mecca. He came with all his fleete vnto an anker in the Island of Maçua, and from thence vpwards in small shipping[1] he went along the coast of the Abassins and Ethiopia [step by step] till he came to the Island of Suachen, standing in 20 degrees towardes the north, and from thence to the hauen of Cossir, standing in 27 degrees, and so he crossed ouer to the citie of Toro, standing on the shore of Arabia, and along by it he went vnto Suez, which is the farthest ende of the streit, and so he turned backe the same way, leauing that countrey and coast discouered so far as neuer any other Portugall[2] captaine had done, although Lopez Suares, gouernour of India, went to the hauen of Juda, and the hauen of Mecca, standing on the coast of Arabia, in 23 degrees of latitude, and 150 leagues from the mouth of the streit. Don Stephan (de Gama)[3] crossing ouer from Cossir to the citie of Toro, as it is reported, found an Island of Brimstone, which was dispeopled by the hand of Mahumet, wherein many

Maçua. Suachen. Cossir. Toro. Suez. An Island of brimstone in the Red Sea.

No anno de 1541 diz q' partio dõ Esteuã da gama gouernador da India pera o estreyto de Meca: foy com toda armada surgir á ylha de Masua, & dahi pera cima em nauios de remos, costeãdo a costa do Abexim & Affrica, de pedra ẽ pedra ate a ilha do Suaquẽ, q' estará ẽ xx graos daltura da parte do norte, dahi ao porto Dalcorer q' está ẽ xxvij atrauessou p'a a cidade de Toro da parte da ribeira, & ao longo della foy a Suez, que he o fim do estreito, por onde se tornaram pello mesmo caminho, deixando aquela terra & costa descuberta, onde capitam Espanhol nunca chegara: ainda q' Lopo Soarez gouernador da India foy à cidade Juda, & porto de Meca, q' está da banda Darabia em vinte & tres graos daltura, & cento & cinquenta legoas da boca do estreito.

Atrauessando dom Esteuam Dalcocer pera o Toro, dizem q' se achou hũa ylha d'enxofre q' foy da mão de Mafamede despouoada,

---

[1] In row boats. [2] Spanish ? [3] Not in Portuguese.

crabs doe breede, which increase[1] nature: wherefore they be greatly esteemed of such as are vnchaste. Also they say that there are in this streit many roses which open when women are in their labour.

John Leo writeth in the (very end of his)[2] geographie which he made of Africa, that there is in the mountaines of Atlas a roote[3] called surnag, ouer which if a maid [pass] (chance to make water)[4] shee shall loose her virginitie.

In the same yeere 1541 [on twelfth day] Don Diego de Almagro killed the Marques Francis Pizarro, and his brother Francis Martinez of Alcantara (in the citie de los Reyes, otherwise called Lima),[5] and made himselfe gouernour of that countrey.

Gomara, hist. gen., lib. 6, cap. 17.

Sibola.

In the [same] yeere 1540[6] the Viceroy Don Antony de Mendoza sent one Francis Vasquez de Coronado by land vnto the prouince of Sibola with an armie of Spaniards and Indians. They went out of Mexico, and came to Culuacan, and from thence to Sibola, which standeth in 30 degrees of latitude.

& muytos cangrejos nella q' ajudam a natureza: pelo q' sam muy estimados, principalmente dos pouco castos. Assi dizem q' há neste estreito muitas rosas das q' se abrem quando as molheres parem. Joam Liam escreue na geographia q' fez Dafrica, q' nos montes Atalantes há hũa herua que a molher que passa per cima, perde a virgindade. Neste mesmo anno de 1541 naũdade[7] dos Reis matou dom Diogo Dalmagro ao Marquez Frãcisco piçarro, & a seu yrmão Francisco mẽz dalcãtara, & se aleuãtou por gouernador da terra.

Neste mesmo anno de 1539[6] mandou o Viso rey dõ Antonio de mẽdoça por terra à prouincia de Sibolla Francisco vasquez coronado cõ bõ exercito de Castelhanos & Indios. Partiram de Mexico, foram a Culuacam, dahi a Sibolla, que està em trinta & oito graos daltura, requereram aos da terra pazes & mantimentos,

---

[1] Assist. [2] Not in Portuguese. [3] A herb.
[4] Dele. [5] Not in Portuguese. [6] 1541 ? [7] No dia?

They required peace with the people and some victuals, being thereof destitute. But they answered that they vsed not to giue any thing to those that came vnto them in warlike manner. So the Spaniards assalted the towne and tooke it, and called it Nueua Granada, because the generall himselfe was borne in Granada. The soldiers found[1] themselues deceiued by the words of the friers, which had beene in those parts before; and because they woulde not returne backe to Mexico againe with emptie hands, they went [from Sibolla] to the towne of Acuco, where they had knowledge Acuco.
of Axa and Quiuira,[2] where there was a king very rich, that did worship a crosse of golde, and the picture of the queene of heauen.[3] They indured many extremities in this journey [and crossed frozen riuers], and [one night all] the Indians fled away from them, and in one morning[4] they found thirtie of their horses dead. From Cicuic they went to Cicuic.
Quiuira,[5] which was two hundred leagues off, according to Quiuira.
their account, passing all through a plaine countrey [without tree or stone], and making by the way certaine hillocks

---

que leuauam disso falta. Responderam q' nam dauã nada a quem hia de guerra: combateram a vila, foy tomada, poseram lhe nome Granada, por o Viso Rey ser natural della.

Achando se os soldados dos frades enganados, por nam tornarẽ com as mãos vazias a Mexico, foram de Sibolla á cidade de Suco, donde teueram noua de Xaqueuira onde estaua hum Rey muito rico, q' adoraua hũa Cruz douro, & hũa molher de prata, q' o ceo senhoreaua. Neste caminho passaram muito trabalho, perigo, & Rios neuados, & lhe fogiram hũa noite todos os Indios, & amanheceram trinta caualos mortos. E de Suco foram a Xaqueuira, que segundo sua conta eram dozentas legoas, tudo campina rasa pelada, sem aruore nem pedra. Faziam por ella montes de bostas

---

[1] Finding. [2] Xaqueuira.

[3] And a woman of silver who governed heaven.

[4] At dawn. [5] From Suco they went to Xaqueuira.

of cowe dung, because thereby they might not loose their way in their returne. [It is said] they had there haile-stones as bigge as oranges [which caused them fear and tears]. Now when they were come to Quiuira [said to be in 42 degrees of latitude], they found the king (called Tatarrax)[1] which they sought for, with a iewell of copper hanging about his necke, which was all his riches. They saw neither any crosse [of gold], nor any image of [siluer] (the queene of heauen),[2] nor any other token of Christian religion. It is written of this countrey that it is but smally inhabited, principally in the plaine and champion places, because the men and women goe in herds with their cattell, whereof they haue great plenty euen as the Arabians do in Barbarie, and they remooue from place to place, euen as the season serueth, and the pastures to feede their cattle. In these parts are certaine beasts almost as bigge as horses, they haue very great hornes, and they beare wooll like vnto sheepe, and so the Spaniards call them. They haue abundance of oxen verie monstrous, being camel backed, and hauing long beards, and on their

Gomara, hist. gen., lib. 6, cap. 18 & 19.

Sheepe as big as horses.

---

de vaca, por se nam perderem á tornada: diz que lhe choueo & cahio pedra do tamanho de laranjas, pello que ouue temor & lagrimas. Chegados a Xaqueuira que dizem estar em quarenta & dous graos daltura, acharam ho Rey que buscauam com hũa joya de cobre ao pescoço, q' era toda sua riq'za, nã viram cruz douro, nẽ molher de prata, nem quem lhe desse razam da nossa sancta fe catholica.

O q' contauam desta terra era ser pouco pouoada, principalmente na campina, porq' os homẽs & molheres costumam andar por ella com seus gados, q' tẽ muitos, como os alarues: & mudã se segundo o tempo & pasto. Diziam q' auia ahi hũas alimarias do tamanho da zemelas, tinham grandes cornos, & lãa como carneyros, & assi lhe chamam os Castelhanos. As vacas sam muitas & muy monstruosas, com grandes corcouas sobre as espaduas, & compridas,

[1] Not in Portuguese. [2] Dele.

necke long manes like vnto horses. [In this prouince there is neither wheat nor barley, millet nor maize, nor do they make bread.] They liue with eating of these oxen and drinking of their blood, and apparell themselues with the skins of the same. The most parte of the flesh that they do eate is rawe, or euill rosted, for they lacke [wood] (pots to seeth it in).[1] They cut their meat with certaine kniues made of flint stone. Their fruite are (damsons, hazel nuts),[2] walnuts, melons, grapes [plums], pines,[3] and mulberies. There be dogges [and mastiffs] so bigge, that one of them alone will hold a bull, though he be neuer so wilde. When they remooue, these dogs do carrie their children, wiues, and stuffe vpon their backes (and they are able to carrie fiftie pound waight.)[4] [Also there are many dogs in the jungle, wild, in droues like cattle.] I passe ouer many things, because the order which I follow will not permit me to be long.

Dogs carying 50 pound waight on their backes.

In the yeere of our Lord 1542 one Diego de Freitas being in the realme of Siam, and in the citie of Dodra as captaine of a ship, there fled from him three Portugals in a junco

---

barbas pelo espinhaço, & pescoço, sedas como de cauallos. Nam ha nesta prouincia trigo, ceuada, milho, mayz, nem fazem pão de nenhũa cousa: das vacas comem, bebem seu sangue, vestem, calçam, a mais da carne crua, ou mal assada aa mingoa de lenha: cortam na cõ facas de pederneyra. As frutas sam nozes, melãas, huuas, ameixas, pinhões, & amoras. Ha cães & rafeyros tamanhos, que hum so tem hum touro por brauo que seja. Quando se mudam leuam o fato, filhos, & molheres encima: tambẽ ha muitos cães no mato brauos em manadas como gados: por muitas cousas passo, porque a regra q' sigo me nam da a mais espaço.

No anno de 1542 achandose Diogo de freytas no Reyno de Syam na cidade Dodra capitam de hũ nauio, lhe fogiram tres Por-

---

[1] Dele. [2] Dele. [3] Cones of the pine tree.
[4] Not in Portuguese.

(which is a kind of ship) towards China. Their names were Antony de Mota, Francis Zeimoro, and Antony Pexoto, directing their course to the citie of Liampo, standing in 30 and odde degrees of latitude. There fell vpon their sterne such a storme, that it set them off the land, and in fewe daies they sawe an island towards the east standing in 32 degrees, which they do name Japan, which seemeth to be the Isle of Zipangri, whereof Paulus Venetus maketh mention,[1] and of the riches thereof. And this Island of Japan hath gold, siluer, and other riches.

Japan discouered by chance.

In this [same] yeere 1542 Don Antonio de Mendoça, Viceroy of Nueua Spagna, sent his captaines and pilots to discouer the coast of Cape del Enganno, where a fleete of Cortez had been before. They sailed till they came to (a place called Sierras Neuadas, or)[2] The snowie mountaines, standing in 40[3] degrees toward the north, where they saw ships with merchandises, which carried on their stems [for device or crest] (the images of certaine birdes called)[4] alcatrarzi [and other birds of gold and silver], (and had the

---

tugueses em hũ junco q' hia pera a China, chamauãse Antonio da mota, Francisco zeimoto, & Antonio pexoto. Hindo se caminho p'a tomar porto na cidade de Liampo, q' está em trinta & tãtos graos daltura, lhe deu tal tormenta aa popa, q' os apartou da terra, & em poucos dias ao Leuãte viram hũa ylha em trinta & dous graos, a q' chamam os Japoes, que parecem ser aquelas Sipangas de que tanto falam as escripturas, & suas riquezas: & assi estas tambem tem ouro, & muyta prata, & outras riquezas.

Neste mesmo anno de 1542 mandou dom Antonio de mendoça Viso rey da noua Espanha seus capitães piloto, descobrir a costa do cabo del enganho, onde os de Cortez chegarã pera cima, foram até as serras neuadas, que dizẽ estar ẽ quarenta & cinco graos da parte do norte, onde viram naos cõ mercadorias, q' traziam nas proas por diuisas alcatrazes, & outros passaros douro & prata, q'

---

[1] Of which writers say so much. [2] Dele. [3] 45 ? [4] Dele.

yards of their sailes gilded, and their prowesse laid ouer siluer).[1] They seemed to be of the Isles of Japan, or of China; for they said that it was not aboue thirtie daies sailing vnto their country. Gomara, hist. gen., lib. 6, cap. 18.

In the (same)[2] yeere 1542, [in the month of October], Don Antony de Mendoça [the viceroy] sent vnto the Islands of Mindanao [Cebu and Nota, where Magellan died] a fleete of sixe ships, with fower or fiue hundred soldiers, and as many Indians of the countrey, the generall whereof was one Rui Lopes de villa Lobos, being his brother in law and a man in great estimation. They set saile from the hauen of Natiuidad, standing in 20 degrees towards the north, vpon All Saints eeue, and shaped their course towards the west [and in the south-west quarter in 19 degrees]. They had sight of the Island of S. Thomas, which Hernando de Grijalua had discouered, and beyond in 17 degrees they had sight of another island, which they named La Nublada (that is, The cloudie Island). From thence they went to another island named Roca partida (that is, The clouen Rocke). The 3 of December they Gomara, hist. gen., lib. 4, cap. 13. Ramusius, 1 vol., fol. 375, pag. 2. Saint Thomas. La Nublada. Roca Partida.

---

pareciam serē dos Japoēs ou Chinas, & diziam q' auia pouco mais de trinta dias de nauegaçam a sua terra.

No anno de 1542 em mes Doutubro, mādou o viso rey dō Antonio ás ylhas de Mindanao, Cebu, & Nata, ōde Magalhães fora morto hūa armada de seis velas, q'trecētos ou quinhētos soldados nelas, & outros tātos Indios da terra: & por capitam môr Ruy lopez de Vilhalobos seu cunhado, pessoa de muita estima. Partiram do porto do Natal, q' està em vinte graos ao norte, vespera de todos os sanctos gouernaram a loeste, & á quarta do Sudoeste em dezanoue graos, ouueram vista da ylha de sancto Thomas q' Fernam de grijaluerez descobrira. Mais a diante em dezasete graos viram outra, a q' poseram nome a Nublada. Dahi foram a outra q' chamam Roca partida. A tres dias de Dezēbro acharam hūs baxos de seis ou sete braças de fundo. A vinte & cinco deste

[1] Not in Portuguese. [2] Dele.

Baxos. found certaine baxos or flates of sixe or seuen fathoms deepe. The 15[1] of the same moneth they had sight of the islands, which Diego de Roca, and Gomez de Sequeira, and Los Reyes. Aluaro de Saauedra had discouered, and named them Los Reyes, because they came vnto them on Twelfe day. And beyond them they found other islands in 10 degrees all standing round, and in the midst of them they came to an anker, where they tooke fresh water and wood.

In the same yeere 1542 Don Diego de Almagro was slaine in Peru by the hands of one Don Vaca de Castro.

In the yeere 1543, in Januarie, they departed from the foresaid islands with all the fleete, and had sight of certaine islands, out of which there came vnto them men in a certaine kinde of boats, and they brought in their hands crosses, and saluted the Spaniards in the Spanish toong saying, Buenas dias, Matelotes, that is to say, Good morrow, companions;[2] whereat the Spaniards much marueiled, being then so farre out of Spaine, to see the men of that countrey with crosses, and to be saluted by them in the Spanish toong, and they seemed in their behauiour to incline somewhat to our Catholique faith. The Spaniards not knowing

---

mes viram as ylhas q' Diogo da Rocha, & Gomez de Sequeira, & Aluaro Sayauedra descobrirã, poseram nome dos Reis por a verẽ em seu dia. E ao diante acharam outras em dez graos, todas em roda: & da mesma maneira surgirã nelles, & tomaram agoa & lenha. Neste mesmo ãno de 1542 foy desbaratado em Peru dom Diogo dalmagro por Vaca de castro.

No anno de 1543 em mes de Janeiro se fezeram aqui à vella com toda a armada, & ouueram vista dalgũas ylhas, de q' sahiram paraos & calaluzez com gẽte, & traziam nas nãos cruzes, & os saluaram com bõs dias matalotes, de q' ficaram marauilhados por se verem de Castella tam alongados, & homẽs naquella terra cõ cruzes, & saudarẽ nos em lingoa Espanhol, & traziam diuisa que

---

[1] 25 ?

[2] Sailors.

that many thereabout had beene christened by Francis de Castro, at the commandement of Antony Galuano, some of them named these islands, Islas de las cruzes, and others named them Islas de los Matelotes. The Isles of Matelotes.

In the same yeere 1543, the first of February, Rui Lopez had sight of that noble island Mindanao, standing in 9 degrees: they could not double it nor yet come to an ancre as they would, because the christened kings and people resisted them, hauing giuen their obedience to Antonie Galuano, whom they had in great estimation, and there were fiue or sixe kings that had receiued baptisme, who by no meanes would incurre his displeasure. Rui Lopez perceiuing this, and hauing a contrary winde, sailed along the coast to finde some aide,[1] and in 4 or 5 degrees he found a small island, which they of the countrey call Sarangam, which they tooke perforce, and in memory of the vizeroy who had sent them thither they named it Antonio, where they remained a whole yeere, in which time there fell out things worthie to be written; but (because there are more Mindanao. Sarangam.

---

parecia sentirem algũa cousa da nossa sancta fe catholica, por nam saberem que auia muytos della que Francisco de Castro por mandado de Antonio Galuam baptizara, hũs lhes chamam as ylhas das Cruzes, & outros dos matalotes.

Neste mesmo anno de 1543, o primeiro de feuereiro ouue Ruy lopez vista daq'lla nobre ilha de Mindanao, em noue graos daltura, nam pode dobrala, nem surgir como desejaua, porq' os Reys Christãos & pouo della lho defenderam, por terem dado a obediẽcia a Antonio galuam, q' elles muito estimauam, & nam queriam anojalo cinco ou seis Reys q' tinham tomado agoa de baptismo. Vendo Ruy lopez ysto, & o vẽto contrario, foy se ao longo da costa buscar algũ abrigo, & em quatro ou cinco graos daltura acharam hũa ylha pequena, a q' os da terra chamam Saranguam: & tomada perforça, em memoria do Viso rey que os la mandaua, poseram lhe nome Antonio, onde esteueram hum anno, socederam lhe

[1] Shelter.

histories that intreat of the same)[1] I leaue them, meaning to meddle with the discoueries onely.[2]

In the same yeere 1543, and in the moneth of August, the generall Rui Lopez sent one Bartholomew[3] de la torre in a (smal)[4] ship into new Spaine, to acquaint the vizeroy don Antonio de Mendoça with all things. They went to the Islands of Siria, Gaonata, Bisaia, and many others, standing in 11 and 12 degrees towards the north, where Magellan had beene, and Francis de Castro also, who [had given eternal life to many who were] there baptized (many),[5] and the Spaniards called thē the Philippinas in memory of the prince of Spaine. Here they tooke victuals and wood, and hoised sailes: they sailed for certaine daies with a fare-winde, till it came vpon the skanting,[6] and came right vnder the tropique of Cancer. The 25 of September they had sight of certaine islands, which they named Malabrigos (that is to say, The euil roads). Beyond them they discouered Las dos Hermanas (that is, The two sisters). And beyond them also they saw 4 islands more, which they called los

The relation of John Gaietan in the first vol. of Ramusius, fol. 376.

The Philippiuas.

Malabrigos.

Las dos Hermauas.

---

cousas dignas de serem escritas, nam me meto antre ellas por serem mais historias que descobrimento.

No mesmo anno de 1543 em mes Dagosto, mandou ho Geral Ruy lopez a Bernaldo dela torre em hum nauio á noua Espanha dar conta a dom Antonio de mēdoça o q' la passara. Forā ter aa ylha de Syria, Gaonata, Bisaya, & outras q' ahi muytas em onze & doze graos da parte do Norte, por onde o Magalhães andara, & Francisco de Castro dera saude perpetua a muytos que por aly se baptizaram, & hos Castelhanos lhe poseram nome as Filipinas, em memoria do principe de Castella. Tomaram mantimento, agoa, & lenha, & se fezeram à vella: foram algus dias em Léste vento a popa, ate que lhe foy escasseando, & se poseram porto do Tropico de Cancro: em xxv do mes de Setēbro virā hūas ylhas, a q' pose-

---

[1] Dele. [2] As they belong more to general history than to discovery. [3] Bernard? [4] Not in Portuguese. [5] Dele. [6] Fell light.

Volcanes. The second of October they had sight of Farfana, beyond which there standeth an high pointed rock, which casteth out fire at 5 places. So sayling in 16 degrees of northerly latitude [700 leagues] from whence they had come, as it seemeth,[1] wanting winde they arriued againe at the Islands of the Philippinas. They had sight of 6 or 7 islands more, but they ankered not at them. They found also an Archipelagus of Islands well inhabited with people, lying in 15 or 16 degrees: the people be white [well disposed], and the women (well proportioned, and)[2] more beautifull and better arraied then in any other place of those parts, hauing many iewels of gold, which was a token that there was some of that metal in the same countrie. Here were also barkes of 43 cubits in length, and 2 fathomes and a halfe in bredth, and the plankes 5 inches thicke, which barkes were rowed with oares. They told the Spaniards, that they vsed to saile in them to China, and that if they would go thither they should haue pilots to conduct them, the countrie not being aboue 5 or 6 daies sayling from

Los Volcanes. La Farfaua.

Sixe or seuen islands more.

An archipelagus of islands.

Pilots for China.

---

ram nome Mal abrigo. E alē delas descobrirão as duas yrmãas: & mais auante quatro, a q' chamarā os Balcones. A dous d'Outubro ouuerā vista da Forfana: & alem della ha hū penedo alto, q' deita fogo por cinco partes.

Hindo assi em xvi graos daltura setecētas legoas donde partirā segūdo o q' lhes parecià, por nā acharē tēpo arribarā as ylhas Felipinas, ouueram vista de seis ou sete, mas nam surgirā nellas: acharam em hū archipelago de ylhas bem pouoadas de gente, q' estam em quinze ou dezaseis graos daltura, aluas, bē despostas molheres mais fermosas & atauiadas q' ha naquellas partes, com muitas joyas douro, q' era sinal auello na terra. Auia tabē nauios de remo de quarenta & tres couados ē cōprido, duas braças & mea de largo, & o taboado de v dedos ē grosso, & diziā q' nauegauā nelles p'a a China, q' se la quisessem hir, q' lhes dariam pilotos pera ysso, q' nam erão mais q' cinco ou seis dias de caminho.

[1] Seemed to them.

[2] Not in Portuguese.

thence. There came vnto them also certaine barkes or boates handsomely decked,[1] wherein the master and principall men sate on high, and vnderneath were very blacke moores with frizled haire [as if for parade or state]: and being demanded where they had these blacke moores, they answered, that they had them from certaine islands standing fast by Sebut, where there were many of them, a thing that the Spaniards much maruailed at, because from thence it was aboue 300 leagues to the places where the black people were. Therefore it seemed, that they were not naturally borne in that climate, but that they be in certaine places scattered ouer the whole circuite of the world [like other races]. For euen so they be in the Islands of Nicobar and Andeman, which stand in the gulfe of Bengala, and from thence by the space of 500 leagues we doe not know of any blacke people. Also (Vasco Nunez de)[2] Valboa declareth, that as he went to discouer the South sea, in a certaine land named Quareca, he found black people with frizled haire, whereas there were neuer any other found either in Noua Spagna, or in Castilia del Oro, or in Peru [called New Castile].

Tambē vierā a elles paraos & calaluzes bē laurados & guarnecidos: & os señores vinhā assētados ē alto, & por baxo certos negros de cabello reuolto, como por estado: pergūtando dōde os ouuerā. Respōderam q' de hūas ylhas. Junto de Sebue mantam auia muitos, de q' se os Castelhanos marauilhauam, por q' dali a mais de trezentas legoas, nam auia gentes pretas, por onde parece q' nam sam naturaes da Clima, se nam ha os em manchas pella redondeza, como qual q'r outra casta: porque assi os ha nas ylhas de Nicober & Andamam, que estam no golfam de Bengala, & dali a quinhentas legoas nam sabemos gentes pretas. Valboa tambem conta que hindo descobrir ho mar da outra banda do Sul, que em hūa certa terra que se chama Cauça, achou gente preta de cabello frisado, nam os auendo em toda a Noua Espanha, nem em Castella

[1] Well built and fitted. [2] Not in Portuguese.

In the yeere 1544 Don Gutierre de Vargas, bishop of Placenza, sent a fleet from the city of Siuil vnto the streits of Magellan: which is reported to haue beene done by the counsel of the vizeroy Don Antonie de Mendoça his cousin.[1] Some suspected that they went to Maluco, others to China, others that they went onely to discouer the land betwixt the streite and the land of Peru on the other side of Chili, because it was reported to be very rich in gold and siluer [which would enrich them speedily]. But this fleete[2] by reason of contrary windes could not passe the streit, yet one small barke passed the same, and sailed along the coast [following the land on the right hand], and discouered all the land, till he came vnto Chirimai, (and Arequipa),[3] which was aboue 500 leagues, for the rest was alreadie discouered by Diego de Almagro, and Francis Pizarro, and their captaines and people at diuers times. By this it appeereth, that from the streit to the equinoctial line on both sides is wholly discouered.

Gomara, hist. gen., lib. 4, cap. 14.

---

do ouro, nem nas terras do Peru, aque elles chamam Noua Castella.

No anno de 1544 mandou dom Guterre de Vargas, Bispo de Plazencia, hũa armada da cidade de Seuilha ao estreyto do Magalhães, & diziam q' por conselho do Viso rey dom Antonio de mẽdoça seu cunhado: algũs sospeitam se hiriam a Maluco, outros á China, outros q'rem dizer q' fossem a mais q' a descobrirem terra q' há do estreito á terra do Peru, da outra banda do Chily: por dizerem q' auia la muyto ouro & prata, q' cedo os enriqueceria. Mas esta armada dizem q' teue ventura contraria, porque nam passou á outra banda do estreito senam hũ galeão q' seguio a costa ao longo da terra sobre a mão dereita, & descobrio toda ate Chirima q' auera quinhentas legoas, q' a outra era ja descuberta por Diogo Dalmagro, & Francisco piçarro, & seus capitães, &

[1] Brother-in-law.

[2] Is said to have been unlucky, for it did not pass, etc.

[3] Not in Portuguese.

In the yeere 1545, and in the moneth of Januarie, Rui Lopez de villa Lobos, and Giraldo, with the Castilians,[1] came to the Island of Moro, and the citie of Carnaf, where they were well receiued of the kings of Gilolo and Tidore, and of the people of the countrey (because Antony Galuano was gone), and put the captaine Don George de Castro to great trouble, as appeered by those things which passed betweene him and the Portugals, and the great expences whereunto he put the fortresse.

The Isle of Moro.

Antonio Galuano gon out of the Malucas.

In the same yeere 1545 Rui Lopez de villa Lobos sent from the Island of Tidore another ship towards New Spaine by the south side of the line, wherein was captaine one Inigo Ortez de Rotha, and for pilot one Jaspar Rico [a native of Almada]. They sailed to the coast of Os Papuas, and ranged all along the same, and because they knew not that Saauedra had beene there before, they chalenged the honor and fame of that discouerie. And because the people there were black and had frisled haire, they named it Nueua

Os Papuas.

---

gentes em diuersas vezes & segũdo isto tudo he descuberto do estreito de Magalhães ate a linha de hũa parte & de outra.

No anno de 1545 em mes de Janeyro, chegou Ruy lopez de Vilhalobos geral dos Castellanos, á ylha do Moro & cidade de Samofo: foy bem recebido dos Reis de Geilolo, & Tidore, & gente da terra: por Antonio galuam ser ja partido, q' deu assaz de trabalho ao capitam dom Jorge de Castro, segũdo parece que lhe socedeo, & aos Portugueses que cõ elle estauam, & muyto gasto à fortaleza.

No mesmo ãno de 1545 tornou mandar Ruy lopez de Vilhalabos da ylha de Tidore, onde ja estaua da parte do Sul outro nauio pera a Noua Espanha, capitam delle Ynhigo ortiz de Roda, piloto Gaspar Rico, natural Dalmada: foram ter aa costa dos Papuas, correram na toda, & como nam sabiam q' por ali andara Sayauedra, adquiriram assi esta honra & descobrimẽto, por a gente ser

[1] Commander of the Spaniards.

Guinea. For the memorie of Saauedra as then was almost lost, as all things else do fall into obliuion, which are not recorded, and illustrated by writing. Nueua Guinea.

In this yeere 1545 and in the moneth of June, there went a junk from the citie of Borneo, wherein went a Portugall called Peter Fidalgo, and by contrary windes he was driuen towards the north; where he founde an island standing in 9 or 10 degrees, that stretched it selfe to 22 degrees of latitude, which is called The Isle of the Luçones, because the inhabitants thereof were so named. It may haue some other name and harborowes, which as yet we know not: it runneth from the north vnto the south-west, and standeth betweene Mindanao and China. They say they sailed along by it 250 leagues, where the land was fruitfull[1] and well couered,[2] and they affirme, that there they will giue two pezos of gold for one of siluer: and yet it standeth not farre from the countrey of China. The Isle of Luçones. Siluer more esteemed than gold.

In the yeere 1553[3] there went out of England certaine shipping, and as it appeered they sailed northward along

---

preta & de cabelo reuolto, poseram lhe nome noua Guinea, por ser ja perdida a memoria de Sayauedra, q' assi faz tudo o que nam alumea a escriptura.

No anno de 1545 en mes de Junho, partio hum junco da cidade de Borneo, em que hia hũ Portugues que se chamaua Pero fidalgo, arribaram com tẽpo contrario, ao norte acharam hũa ylha de noue ou dez graos, ate vinte & dous daltura, a que chamaram dos Lucões, por assi auerẽ nome os habitadores della, pode ter outros, & assi seus portos q' indagora nam sabemos. Corre se de Nordeste a Sudoeste: jaz antre Mindanao & a China, diz q' foram ao longo della dozentas & cinquẽta legoas, em q' a terra era fresca & bẽ assombrada, & contam q' dam ali dous pesos douro por hum de prata, ainda q' he muy vezinha da terra da China.

No anno de 1550 em Inglaterra se fez hũa armada, & segundo

---

[1] Pleasant ? [2] Well favoured. [3] 1550 ?

the coast of Norway and Finmark, and from thence east, [because there is no certainty about the route they followed nor the latitude they reached, unless from a letter of the Grand Duke of Moscovy, in which it is declared that there arrived at his Port an English vessel, of which was captain Richard Trebuli, and that there was brought to him by an Englishman called Geneloux, a letter from the king, in which he asked that his subjects might come and go and trade in his country. He gave leave and safe conduct. This Muscovy, according to his description, extends from sixty to seventy degrees] (till they came betweene 70 and 80 degrees vnto Moscouia, for so far one of the ships went: but)[1] I know not what became of the rest: & this was the last discouery made vntil this time. From this lande of Moscouie eastward you saile vnto Tartary, and at the farther end of it standeth the countrey and prouince of China. It is said that betweene China and Tartary there is a wall aboue 200 leagues in length, standing neere vnto 50 degrees of latitude.

Moscouie discouered by sea by the English.

---

parece foy ao norte ao longo da costa de Gotea: & dahi ao leuante, porq' o caminho q' fezeram, & altura em q' se poseram, aindagora nam ha certeza, somente ver hũa carta do gram Duque de Mascouia, em q' declaraua q' chegara a seu porto hũa Nao Dinglaterra, de q' era capitam Richarte Trebuli, q' lhe mandara por hum Ingres q' se dizia Geneloux, hũa carta del Rey em q' lhe pedia q' seus vasallos podessem hir & vir, & tratar em sua terra, elle dera saluo conduto & licença. Esta Mascouia segundo sua descripção mostra, de sessenta graos pera setenta. Os outros nauios nam sey q' fim ouueram, somente ser este derradeiro descobrimento a q' ate esta era feyto era: & desta terra de Mascouia pera o Leuante vay a Tartaria, & na fim della aa prouincia da China, q' dizem ter hũ muro de mais de dozentas legoas, antre hũa & a outra porto de cincoenta graos daltura.

---

[1] Dele.

Now I gather by all the precedent discoueries, that the whole earth is in circuite 360 degrees according to the geometrie thereof: and to every degree the ancient writers allow 17 leagues and a halfe, which amount vnto 6,300 leagues [the moderns make the degree $16\frac{2}{3}$, making 6,000 leagues], yet I take it that euerie degree is iust 17 leagues, so that the circuit of the earth is about 6,200. Howsoeuer it be, all is discouered and sailed from the east vnto the west almost euen as the sunne compasseth it: but from the south to the north there is great difference; for towardes the north pole there is found discouered no more then 77 or 78 degrees, which come to 1326[1] leagues: and towards the south pole there is discouered from the equinoctiall to 52 or 53 degrees, that is, to the streit which Magellan passed through (which amounteth to about 900 leagues); and putting both these saide maine sums togither, they amount to 2226[2] leagues. Now take so many out of 6300[3] leagues,

---

O que disto tenho alcançado he ser a redõdeza de trezentos & sessenta graos, segũdo sua geometria, a q' deram os antiguos dezasete legoas & mea, em q' se montam seis mil & trezentas, os modernos poẽ o grao em xvj & dous terços por virem seis mil legoas. Com tudo eu tenho q' sam dezasete largas, em q' saem o ambito da terra en seis mil & dozentas. Como q'r q' seja toda he descuberta & nauegada de Léste oeste, quasi por onde o sol anda, mas de Sul ao norte ha muita deferença, porq' contra elle nam se acha mais descuberto, q' ate setenta & sete, ou setenta & oito graos daltura, em q' se montam mil & trezẽtas & tantas legoas. E da parte do Sul ate nouecentas, por ser descuberto cincoẽto & dous, ou cincenta & tres graos, que o estreito por onde o Magalhães passara, juntas todas fazẽ em soma duas mil & dozentas,

---

[1] 1,300 and odd. [2] 2,200. [3] 6,200.

there remaineth as yet vndiscouered (north and south aboue the space of)[1] 4000 leagues.

FINIS.

To the praise of God, and of the glorious Virgin Mary, this account is finished of the discoueries of the Antilles and of India. It was printed in the house of John Barreira, printer to the king our lord, on the 15th of December, 1563.

---

tiradas de seis mil & dozentas, ficam por descobrir quatro mil legoas.

LAUS DEO.

A louuor de Deos, & da gloriosa Virgem Maria, se acabou o liuro dos descobrimentos das Antilhas & India. Imprimio se em casa de Joham da Barreira, impressor del Rey nosso senhor. Aos quinze de Dezembro. De mil & quinhẽtos & sessenta & tres annos.

[1] Not in Portuguese.

LONDON: T. RICHARDS, 37, GREAT QUEEN STREET.